A Thematic Study by the IPCC on the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill since June 2019 and the Police Actions in Response

Volume 1

Independent Police Complaints Council

A Thematic Study by the IPCC on the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill since June 2019 and the Police Actions in Response

FULL REPORT CONTENTS

●

VOLUME 1

●

VOLUME 2

●

VOLUME 3

●

VOLUME 4

CONTENTS

VOLUME 1

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

CHAPTER 2

LEGAL POWERS, CONSTRAINTS AND IMPLICATIONS

CHAPTER 3

METHODOLOGY AND SOURCES OF INFORMATION

CHAPTER 4

AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

Origins and Scope

1.1 This is the first ever Thematic Study (Study) that the Independent Police Complaints Council (IPCC) has carried out on such an extensive scale and before full investigation of complaints under the Two-Tier System for dealing with complaints against the Police.[1] Under this System, the Complaints Against Police Office (CAPO) of the Hong Kong Police Force (HKPF) receives and investigates complaints; the IPCC monitors the investigations, reviews the findings and provides opinions to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) and where necessary, the Chief Executive of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region (HKSAR). Where appropriate, the IPCC will make recommendations for improvement on practices or procedures of the Police.

1.2 The IPCC statutory functions are set out inter alia in section 8(1)[2] of the IPCC Ordinance. Section 8 (2) further empowers the IPCC to "*do all such things that are reasonably necessary for, or incidental or conducive to, the performance of its functions under this Ordinance*". This Study has been undertaken pursuant to these functions and powers.

1.3 In the past, the IPCC has carried out studies over discrete events and subjects, after the complaints have been investigated by CAPO. An example was the Report on the Visit of the then Vice Premier Li Keqiang due not only to complaints against police officers, but also the public concern over the Police handling of the security arrangements for the visit. That study aimed to inform the public of the IPCC review of the complaints received and to recommend improvement for future Police operations from the lessons learnt from the episode.

---

[1] A detailed explanation on how this "Two-Tier Complaints System" works is given in Chapter 5.

[2] The functions of the Council are—

(a) to observe, monitor and review the handling and investigation of reportable complaints by the Commissioner, and to make recommendations (as the Council considers appropriate) to the Commissioner or the Chief Executive or both of them in respect of the handling or investigation of reportable complaints;
(b) to monitor actions taken or to be taken in respect of any member of the police force by the Commissioner in connection with reportable complaints, and to advise (as the Council considers appropriate) the Commissioner or the Chief Executive or both of them of its opinion on such actions;
(c) to identify any fault or deficiency in any practice or procedure adopted by the police force that has led to or might lead to reportable complaints, and to make recommendations (as the Council considers appropriate) to the Commissioner or the Chief Executive or both of them in respect of such practice or procedure;
(d) to review anything submitted to it by the Commissioner pursuant to this Ordinance; and
(e) to promote public awareness of the role of the Council; and
(f) (without limiting the generality of the foregoing) any function conferred on it by or under this or any other Ordinance.

1.4 Each year, the IPCC, in the performance of its duties, makes recommendations to the Commissioner on improvement to Police procedures and practices which have led to or might lead to Reportable Complaints (RCs). [3] Over the past five years, the number of recommendations made are as follows:

IPCC Annual Report	No. of Recommendations
2018/19	23
2017/18	26
2016/17	10
2015/16	17
2014/15	14

Table 1-1 No. of Recommendations to Police from 2014/15 to 2018/19

1.5 Since 9 June 2019, widespread protests have broken out and accompanied with violence not seen since 1967. As the primary agency for the maintenance of law and order, the Police has had the duty to respond to these protests and the accompanying violence. The protests were triggered by the Fugitive Offenders and Mutual Legal Assistance in Criminal Matters Legislation (Amendment) Bill (Fugitive Offenders Bill) which the HKSAR Government (Government) introduced into the Legislative Council (LegCo) on 29 March 2019. Despite the Government's announcement on 15 June 2019 to suspend the Bill and then in early September formally to withdraw the Bill, the protests did not cease but continued with increasing violence. This Study covers facts for six identified incident days and two selected topics during this period of protests with an Overview of the protests from June 2019 to March 2020 and the corresponding Police action in response.

1.6 This Study, covering the public order events (POEs) from 9 June 2019, has three objectives:

(a) To enable the IPCC to gain a broad picture of the POEs so that it may more effectively perform its duty of reviewing the investigations by CAPO into the complaints received;

(b) To identify lessons to be learnt and make recommendations to the Police, so that complaints from future operations may be prevented; and

(c) To promote public awareness of the work of the IPCC.

1.7 The decision for this Study was taken at the IPCC Special Council Meeting on 5 July 2019 because by then there were already 53 RCs and 68 Notifiable Complaints (NCs) related to the POEs. The IPCC considered that such a study would provide the broad picture necessary

---

[3] These recommendations may be found in the Annual Reports of the IPCC.

for it to effectively perform its duty to review the findings of CAPO investigations. It was intended to cover the POEs from 9 June to 2 July and the action of the Police. The decision for the Study was announced by press release on the day.

1.8 A Special Task Force was set up, headed by the Deputy Secretary-General (Operations) with Secretariat staff experienced in vetting CAPO investigations. They were supervised by a Task Force Steering Group comprising the Chairmen of the Serious Complaints Committee (SCC), the Operations Advisory Committee, the Legal Committee and the Publicity and Survey Committee.

1.9 The IPCC decision to undertake the Study was welcomed by both the Chief Executive and the Commissioner. Both pledged to give such support and provide such information as necessary. The IPCC further indicated its intention to publish a report of the Study (Report). As the Study was to cover only the period from 9 June to 2 July 2019, the Chief Executive expressed the wish to see the Report completed and published within six months, by early January 2020.

1.10 The IPCC called for information from the public via a dedicated email portal and a telephone hotline. By mid-August 2019, the IPCC had received more than 24 000 texts, photos, video clips and hyperlinks.

1.11 Meanwhile, all complaints arising from the POEs were viewed as serious complaints by the IPCC and would be overseen by the SCC with interviews or collection of evidence under observation by either a Member of the Council or an Observer from among the 120 Observers, appointed by the Secretary for Security, to assist the IPCC.

1.12 As the protests continued after 1 July 2019 with increasing frequency and ferocity, the complaints against the Police increased. On 21 July 2019, a major incident in Yuen Long sparked accusations of Police collusion with triads and a large number of complaints clustered. Then, on 11 August 2019, there were large-scale protests occasioning the firing of a tear gas canister in the MTR station at Kwai Fong, attracting much public concern. In this light, at another Special Council Meeting on 16 August 2019, the IPCC decided to extend the scope of the Study to include the incidents in Yuen Long and Kwai Fong Station.

1.13 The protests, however, continued and escalated. On 31 August 2019, after another day of city-wide protests, Police action in the Prince Edward Station injured a number of protesters. There was confusion over the number of injured protesters in the reports by the Fire Services Department (FSD) and the Police, giving rise to speculation that some deaths were not accounted for. The refusal of the MTR Corporation Limited (MTRC), for data privacy protection, to publish the closed circuit television (CCTV) recordings of the MTR station,

fuelled the speculation. As this was a matter of serious public concern, the IPCC brought this incident into the Study.

1.14 The protests continued to spread on a wider scale and with increasing ferocity of violence and even vandalism from the end of August going on to March 2020. This Study therefore comprises:

(a) An overview of the POEs from 9 June 2019 to March 2020 (Chapter 4);

(b) A study of the events of six identified incident days -

  (i) 9 June 2019 (Chapter 7);

  (ii) 12 June 2019 (Chapter 8);

  (iii) 1 July 2019 (Chapter 9);

  (iv) 21 July 2019 (Yuen Long Incident) (Chapter 10);

  (v) 11 August 2019 (Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations Incident) (Chapter 11); and

  (vi) 31 August 2019 (Prince Edward Station Incident) (Chapter 12).

1.15 These six incident days were chosen because of complaints (both reportable and notifiable) clustering around them and because of the public concern expressed over those incidents. They also evidenced the change of protest action and tactics, followed by some revision of Police strategy.

1.16 In addition to the Overview (Chapter 4) offering a broad perspective and the Incident Days (Chapters 7-12) detailing the individual events, the Study includes two other topics of public interest:

(a) Police Identification During the Public Order Events (Chapter 13); and

(b) Detention Arrangements at San Uk Ling Holding Centre (Chapter 14).

These two topics have figured in complaints as well as in expressions of public concern as reported by the media.

Nature of the Thematic Study

1.17 The IPCC has no investigatory powers and this Study does not address the conduct of individual police officers. That is a matter for the Commissioner through CAPO and with disciplinary control over all police officers under the Police Force Ordinance (PFO). The public,

as with the IPCC, would expect him to act firmly with fairness, where action is needed in order to ensure the integrity of the Force and to maintain trust of the public.

1.18 Although the IPCC has no powers of compulsion, it has the support of the Commissioner and other public institutions and much information has also been provided by the public and sourced from public domains including the media. The IPCC also puts on record its appreciation for the advice and assistance of the panel of international experts in this Study.

Perspective of Complaints Received

1.19 The IPCC has yet to review the findings of the ongoing CAPO investigations into complaints received as at 29 February 2020, totalling 542 RCs. Nonetheless, Chapter 5: Synopsis of Complaints gives details of the nature and volume of these complaints to facilitate a better understanding of the POEs over the past months.

Perspective of Principle

1.20 The Police has a public duty to maintain law and order of course, to be discharged within the boundaries of the law. The Police Force has General Orders and Manuals for compliance inter alia on the use of force. Together with the law, they form an important part of the perspective against which to view the action of the Police in response to the POEs. The Report dedicates individual chapters for these different perspectives.

Perspective of Police Officers, the Protesters and the Public

1.21 For better understanding of the POEs and the Police action in response, the IPCC has commissioned independent academics to conduct two surveys, one on how police officers view themselves as officers of the law and the other on how protesters and the general public view the Police action. The results of these surveys are summarised in Chapter 15 of this Report. The full survey reports are available on the IPCC website.

Limitations of the Report

1.22 This Study seeks to provide the fullest view possible of the POEs and the Police action in response. From this view the IPCC distills the lessons to be learnt and makes recommendations to the Commissioner. The IPCC is conscious that this is a collection of the facts available to date and so there could be gaps in the Report.

Adoption of the Report

1.23 At the Special Council Meeting held on 24 April 2020, IPCC Members unanimously adopted this Report and approved it (1) be made to the Chief Executive pursuant to section 30 of the IPCC Ordinance, (2) be made to the Commissioner pursuant to section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance, and (3) be published for public information.

CHAPTER 2

LEGAL POWERS, CONSTRAINTS AND IMPLICATIONS

2.1 The Study is conducted pursuant to the IPCC's authority under sections 8(1)(a), 8(1)(c) and 8(2) of the IPCC Ordinance. The aim is to make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) and the Chief Executive on how police practices and procedures may be improved in the light of the Police handling of the Public Order Events (POEs) arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill since 9 June 2019 in Hong Kong.

Legal Basis to Conduct Study under the IPCC Ordinance

2.2 One of the statutory functions conferred by section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance to the IPCC is *"to identify any fault or deficiency in any practice or procedure adopted by the police force that has led to or might lead to reportable complaints, and to make recommendations (as the Council considers appropriate) to the Commissioner or the Chief Executive or both of them in respect of such practice or procedure"*. In accordance with this section, the purpose of the Study is to identify any fault or deficiency in the practice and procedure adopted by the Police in specific POEs covered by the Study; and to make recommendations to the Chief Executive and the Commissioner accordingly. The Study also enables the IPCC to effectively discharge its duty under section 8(1)(a) of monitoring the police investigation of individual complaints arising out of or in connection with those specific POEs, by providing the Council with an overall and more comprehensive picture of the POEs. In this regard, the Study aids the work of different IPCC committees, including the Serious Complaints Committee, Operations Advisory Committee, and Publicity and Survey Committee.

2.3 With regard to the actual operation of the Study, section 8(2) of the IPCC Ordinance empowers the IPCC, stipulating that *"[t]he Council may do all such things that are reasonably necessary for, or incidental or conducive to, the performance of its functions under this Ordinance"*. For this Study, the IPCC has proactively taken various steps, including in particular:

(a) inviting the general public to provide information;

(b) commissioning research on display of police insignia in POEs in other jurisdictions;

(c) engaging academics and scholars to conduct two surveys, one on how police officers view themselves as officers of the law and the other on how protesters and the general public view the Police action in the POEs; and

(d) inviting a panel of international experts to advise on the conduct of the Study.

2.4 This Report is made by the IPCC to the Chief Executive pursuant to section 30 of the IPCC Ordinance and to the Commissioner pursuant to section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance.

Legal Limitations and Their Implications

2.5 The IPCC has attempted to reconstruct all essential and important episodes on the six incident days. To this end, the IPCC has collated information from all possible sources, including the Police, the media, Government departments, public and corporate bodies, as well as the general public.

2.6 The IPCC does not, however, have legal powers to summon witnesses, seize records (e.g. video footage, police records), issue search warrants or compel the production of documents by the Police and other stakeholders. The IPCC also lacks statutory authority to require members of the public or the Police to answer specific questions.

2.7 In the absence of such powers, on the part of the IPCC, the basis for the Police's provision of information to the IPCC has been the Chief Executive's indication of full support for the Study and her pledge to the IPCC Chairman of her Administration's full co-operation, as well as Commissioner's indication to the IPCC Chairman that the Police would support and cooperate with the IPCC.[1]

2.8 The IPCC considers that the Chief Executive and her Administration have used their best endeavours to cooperate and abide by their pledge.

2.9 Given the magnitude and rapidly evolving circumstances of POEs over the past months, the IPCC recognises that the Police has had to face unprecedented challenges and understandably did not have the manpower or resources to meet these challenges and respond to the IPCC within the time requested as well as carrying out normal duties. In most cases, the information requested was subsequently provided. In some instances, the Police has explained that some of the requested information was not available due to the fact that officers were unable to make detailed contemporaneous records as the circumstances were extremely chaotic and demanding.

2.10 Apart from the Police, the IPCC has also received assistance and cooperation from various stakeholders, including the Fire Services Department, the Hospital Authority, the MTR Corporation Limited and CITIC Limited, for which the IPCC wishes to express its gratitude.

[1] The IPCC's Press Release on 2 July 2019

Due to privacy or related concerns, some stakeholders could not fully meet the requests of the IPCC in their entirety regarding transfer of personal data. This was particularly with requests for release of CCTV footage capturing facial images. Meanwhile, the Secretariat of the Legislative Council (LegCo) to date has not been able to provide CCTV footage of the storming of the LegCo Complex on 1 July 2019 because the Legislative Council Commission (LCC) for the 2019-2020 legislative session has yet to be formed. Hence, the LegCo Secretariat cannot present IPCC's request for LCC's consideration.

2.11 As a result of the above challenges and the scale and evolving nature of the POEs, the Study has taken time to progress despite the efforts of the IPCC Members and Secretariat.

CHAPTER 3

METHODOLOGY AND SOURCES OF INFORMATION

3.1 The purpose of this Study is to ascertain the facts pertaining to the six incident days and the two topics so as to:

(a) facilitate the IPCC to examine at a later stage the Reportable Complaints arising from the six incident days and the two topics; and

(b) identify any fault or deficiency in any police practices or procedures that might lead to complaints, and to make relevant recommendations to the Commissioner of Police in respect of such practices or procedures.

The IPCC has indicated to the Chief Executive that it intends to publish this Report for the information of the community. In this respect, the IPCC believes that it also has the effect of increasing the public's awareness of the role of the IPCC. The IPCC has also decided to submit this Report to the Chief Executive pursuant to section 30 of the IPCC Ordinance.

3.2 To achieve this purpose, this Study has been conducted in three stages, namely:

(a) Fact Finding;

(b) Assessment; and

(c) Recommendations.

3.3 This is a Report on IPCC's findings as at 29 February 2020.

3.4 After collecting information from available sources on the six incident days and the facts relevant to the two topics including the circumstances under which the facts unfolded, the IPCC would duly assess all the materials and make recommendations in accordance with section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance. The objective is to improve Police operations from a macro perspective.

3.5 The fact finding exercise in this Study is undertaken by a Task Force set up within the IPCC Secretariat, under the supervision of a Task Force Steering Group comprising the Chairmen of the Serious Complaints Committee, Operations Advisory Committee, Legal Committee and Publicity and Survey Committee, and in consultation with the International Expert Panel (IEP) on the approach and methodology in data collection and analysis. The IPCC's engagement with the IEP on the progress of the Study is outlined at Annex 1. This

Chapter outlines the methodology of the fact finding process, which includes collection of information, examination of data, and use of the materials for the purpose of the Study.

Collection of Information

3.6 The IPCC has endeavoured to cast the net as wide as possible to reconstruct the facts relevant to the Study. The major sources of information are:

Hong Kong Police Force

3.7 Since 2 July 2019, the IPCC has been in liaison with the Police for access to information on their handling of the public order events (POEs) in the six incident days and on the two topics under study. Prior to publication of this Report, there have been regular meetings and rounds of letter/memo/email correspondence with the Police on the relevant arrangements. Information has been collected from the Police through the following:

(a) documentary materials and statistical information concerning Police manpower, deployment plan, summary brief and incident log, use of force, Letter of No Objection (LoNO) applications, police injuries on the six incident days under study; police weapons and use of force guidelines; detention arrangements and records of San Uk Ling Holding Centre (SULHC); background and identification of Special Tactical Contingent; media handling, doxxing against police officers and handling of misinformation, furnished in six main batches and subsequent follow-ups since September 2019;

(b) meetings with the Police between October and December 2019 on Police operations on 9 June, 12 June, 1 July and 21 July 2019, detention arrangements at SULHC, cyberbullying against police officers, and Police media handling policy; further responses by the Police in February 2020 in respect of the incidents on 21 July, 11 August and 31 August 2019, and the detention arrangements at SULHC, and clarifications pertaining to the six incident days and SULHC;

(c) operational orders, videos recorded by the Police pertaining to the operations on 9 June, 12 June, 1 July, 11 August, and 31 August 2019 (comprising a total of 96 video clips of about 18 hours long), detention registers and occurrence books of SULHC, police beat radio and 999 calls recordings on 21 July 2019, examined by IPCC Secretariat at the Police Headquarters between September and November 2019 and in February 2020 respectively;

(d) visits to Police Tactical Unit (PTU) Headquarters for demonstrations of the equipment and weapons used by the Police and different strategies in anti-riot

operation of PTU Company in August and September 2019; and

(e) visits to police stations in Tsim Sha Tsui and Wong Tai Sin, and Wong Tai Sin Disciplined Services Quarters by representatives of TFSG and IEP in September 2019, and visit to detention facilities at SULHC and Sheung Shui Police Station in October 2019.

3.8 In addition to the above information, the Police has provided the IPCC with a Management Response on each of the incident days. This Management Response is included in all relevant Chapters.

3.9 Materials were also obtained from other sources (in no specific order) via information requests, meetings and site visits:

Fire Services Department

- Ambulance service logs and relevant information relating to the events on 31 August and SULHC at meetings in October 2019 and subsequent follow-ups.

MTR Corporation Limited

- CCTV records, damage reports, and voice communication records between MTR Operations Control Centre and the Police, Fire Services Department (FSD) / Ambulance personnel concerning various days under study, comprising a total of 259 video clips of about 458 hours long, 9 damage reports, and 126 audio clips of about 80 minutes, received in October 2019.

- Supplementary information relating to events at MTR stations on 21 July, 11 August, and 31 August 2019.

- Visits to Yuen Long Station, Prince Edward Station and Kwai Fong Station.

Legislative Council

- Information on damages provided by Legislative Council (LegCo) Secretariat at meeting and site visit to LegCo Complex in July 2019.

CITIC Limited

- CCTV records of 12 June and 1-2 July at Lung Wui Road and Tim Mei Avenue provided

by CITIC Limited in September and November 2019 respectively, comprising a total of 258 video clips of about 286 hours long.

- Visit to CITIC Tower and the vicinity.

Hospital Authority

- Statistical information on persons sustaining injuries during the POEs from 9 June to 24 November received from Hospital Authority in November 2019.

Public Information from Relevant Organisations

3.10 The IPCC has also made reference to the following sources of information:

(a) Press releases and POEs-related information published by the Police (*police.gov.hk*) and information given at Police media briefings;

(b) Press releases of the Government and news published through Information Services Department (*news.gov.hk* and *isd.gov.hk*);

(c) Press statements and documents published by LegCo including records of LegCo Meetings and replies to LegCo Questions (*legco.gov.hk*);

(d) Press releases of MTR Corporation Limited (MTRC) regarding the incidents on 21 July, 11 August and 31 August 2019 (archived at *www.mtr.com.hk*); and

(e) Information given by FSD at press conference in September 2019 in relation to the Prince Edward Station Incident on 31 August.

Information from Social Media

3.11 The IPCC also looked for information on internet forums, social media and video-sharing platforms, such as LIHKG (*lihkg.com*), Hong Kong Discuss Forum commonly known as DISCUSS (*discuss.com.hk*), HKGolden (*hkgolden.com*), Facebook (*facebook.com*) and YouTube (*youtube.com*). However, some instant messaging Apps, such as Telegram, are not fully accessible to the public, and access to certain chat groups within the App is restricted to some account holders only.

Appeal for Information from the Public

3.12 The IPCC has set up a dedicated platform to appeal to the public for any information related to the POEs and incidents since 9 June 2019 through email (*taskforce@ipcc.gov.hk*),

WhatsApp (9781 9840), or telephone (2862 8200). As at 29 February 2020, information from the public was received via 12 217 emails (including 9 838 template emails supporting the police officer's firing of live round in Tsuen Wan on 1 October 2019), 658 WhatsApp users, 112 telephone calls, four letters and one digital video disc (DVD) by mail/by hand. A summary of the information and distribution of such is set out in Table 3-1 and Table 3-2 below. A sample of the IPCC "Call for Information" form and further analysis of the information received from the public are at Annex 2.

	Photo attachments	Video attachments/links
Email	2 562	3 347
WhatsApp	20 988	19 186
Total	**23 550**	**22 533**

Table 3-1 Information received from the public

Incident Day	Number of submissions from members of the public (Photo / Video)
Sunday 9 June 2019 (Chapter 7)	730 / 699
Wednesday 12 June 2019 (Chapter 8)	1 460 / 1 397
Monday 1 July 2019 (Chapter 9)	1 366 / 1 307
Sunday 21 July 2019 (Chapter 10)	1 295 / 1 239
Sunday 11 August 2019 (Chapter 11)	1 083 / 1 037
Saturday 31 August 2019 (Chapter 12)	1 319 / 1 262

Table 3-2 Distribution of information received from the public on the six incident days

Live Footage and Media Reports

3.13 Live news footages from ten local electronic media and their online webcast platforms covering POEs between June 2019 and February 2020, daily news clipping from 33 print local media (newspapers and magazines), as well as coverage from nearly 200 local, regional and international web outlets via monitoring services provided by Wisers Information Limited and the subscription to three overseas newspapers facilitate the IPCC Secretariat's research and corroboration of facts. In addition, the IPCC also took reference of reports and videos footage from other websites and local online forums to support or verify the reconstruction of

chronology of the incidents. A summary of the media reports examined in this Study is as follows:

Incident Day	Number of news articles	Number / Duration of news footage
Sunday 9 June 2019 (Chapter 7)	171	53 / around 48 hours
Wednesday 12 June 2019 (Chapter 8)	318	281 / around 163 hours
Monday 1 July 2019 (Chapter 9)	68	138 / around 120 hours
Sunday 21 July 2019 (Chapter 10)	294	70 / around 107 hours
Sunday 11 August 2019 (Chapter 11)	213	102 / around 101 hours
Saturday 31 August 2019 (Chapter 12)	252	112 / around 117 hours

Table 3-3 Media reports examined on the six incident days

Analysis of Information

3.14 Given the time constraint and the availability of information from different sources, the examination of material for reconstructing the chronology of each incident day proceeded in parallel with the information gathering process. In corroborating the facts, live footage and video clips sourced from the media were cross-referenced with maps, news reports, public information and subsequently verified against information from the Police, CITIC Limited, MTRC and FSD. The IPCC has made the best efforts possible to check information against different sources to establish the facts and chronology of the incidents.

3.15 Within the IPCC's powers and scope for conducting the Study, the TFSG has fully taken the IEP's advice to give a factual and impartial report on the incidents in a balanced, even-handed way with reference to the context, and structure the observations on what distilled from the facts in the chronology. In line with the approach as discussed with IEP during their visit to Hong Kong in November 2019, rigorous comparison, counter-checking and matching of various sources of information on particular episodes of an incident have been undertaken to ensure reasonable grounds to substantiate the findings and to support the analysis. Sources of information for reconstructing the chronology of specific incidents / topics are listed in the respective Chapters.

3.16 Along the fact finding process, graphics (e.g. maps and floor plans) and photos were found in the public domain. Selection of the graphics and photos for use in the Report was based on a number of factors, such as the information that the graphics and photos sufficiently covered the incidents / topics under study and whether the IPCC could get copyright consent.

Not all copyright owners were willing to give consent or the consent fees were pitched at prohibitively high levels. Notwithstanding these set-backs, the IPCC is satisfied that the graphics and photos with publication permission obtained did sufficiently substitute the information of the photos and graphics for which no permission was granted.

Points to Note

3.17 The Report is based on information available to the IPCC up to 29 February 2020. This information was collected on a voluntary basis. The IPCC has no investigatory powers to compel the disclosure of information.

3.18 Unless otherwise specified, the dates and times cited in this Report refer to the year of 2019 and local Hong Kong time (i.e. Coordinated Universal Time plus eight hours) in 24-hour clock format with hours and minutes in two digits (e.g. 21:00). Calendar dates in the general format of day, month and year (e.g. 9 June 2019) and in brief format of year-month-day (e.g. 2019-06-09) are used interchangeably in the Report. Details of time in the chronology of incidents are approximate having regard to certain slight variations between different sources. Similarly, quantifiable descriptions, such as number of participants or protesters present at particular junctures, were estimates based on media reports, Police information, or manual counting from photos or video snapshots. Whilst every effort has been made to ensure accuracy of the information, the contents may not be an absolute or complete account of the incidents.

ANNEX 1

IPCC'S ENGAGEMENT WITH INTERNATIONAL EXPERT PANEL FOR FORMULATION OF THE THEMATIC STUDY

Date	Events
2019-08-16	• Invitation of scholars and specialists from oversight bodies in United Kingdom, Australia, Canada and New Zealand with extensive experience in researching crowd behaviour and public order and studying POEs and Police action to form an IEP to enhance the objectivity of the Study.
2019-09-04	• Announcement of the appointment of IEP comprising five persons (listed below) pursuant to section 6(3) of the IPCC Ordinance to give advice to the IPCC and to provide independent assessment of the progress of the Study. Chairman : Sir Denis O'Connor, CBE, QPM 2012 Radzinowicz Fellow and Affiliated Lecturer at the Institute of Criminology, University of Cambridge; Formerly Chief Inspector of Her Majesty's Inspectorate of Constabulary (2008 – 2012) and Chief Constable of Surrey (2000 – 2004), United Kingdom Members : Judge Colin Doherty Chair of Independent Police Conduct Authority, New Zealand; District Court Judge of New Zealand The Hon Michael F. Adams QC Chief Commissioner of the Law Enforcement Conduct Commission, New South Wales, Australia Professor Clifford Stott Dean for Research, Faculty of Natural Sciences, Keele University, United Kingdom Mr. Gerry McNeilly Barrister and Solicitor, Ontario, Canada; Formerly Independent Police Review Director, Ontario, Canada (2008 – 2019) and President of Canadian Association for Civilian Oversight of Law Enforcement (2018 – 2019)

Date	Events
2019-09-02 to 2019-09-06	• Visit to Hong Kong by Sir Denis O'Connor and Mr. Gerry McNeilly, Chairman and Member of IEP, who participated in (i) meetings with the IPCC Secretariat and Members on the methodology, scope and research of the Study; (ii) scene visit to LegCo Complex and areas in the vicinity; (iii) meeting with the Police; (iv) scene visits to police stations and disciplined service quarters; (v) visit to PTU Headquarters; and (vi) meeting with local scholars. • Media briefing by Chairman of IEP.
2019-09-20	• Meeting of Task Force with IEP Members via tele-conferencing.
2019-09-23	• Meeting of Task Force with IEP Members via tele-conferencing.
2019-11-03 to 2019-11-09	• IEP Visit to Hong Kong, when the whole panel participated in (i) meetings with IPCC Members and Secretariat to discuss the POEs development, progress of the Study, and the IPCC capability; (ii) meeting with local scholars on POEs-related survey findings; and (iii) meeting and knowledge sharing session with the Police representatives. • Media briefing by IEP Chairman and Members. • IEP communicated to the IPCC Chairman via "Report of Progress (8 Nov 2019)" (Appendix**)** their views regarding the IPCC's capability and powers as well as progress on the Study.
2019-11-13 and 2019-12-03	• Meetings of the IPCC to review progress of various aspects of the Study upon receipt of IEP's views on the production of this Report.
2019-12-11	• The IEP indicated that they had taken a decision to stand aside from its role of supporting the Study any further at this stage. • Press statement by the IPCC regarding the IEP's standing aside from its role after the preliminary stage of Study. • The IPCC extended deep appreciation to the IEP for their participation in and contribution to the assessment of the progress of the Study and for their advice on data collection and analysis in the fact-finding process; the IPCC would take into account the IEP's advice thoroughly in finalising the Report which is essentially a report on facts; the IPCC is pleased with IEP members' desire to remain engaged. After publishing the Report, depending on the development of events and needs, the IPCC would decide the way forward and appropriate arrangement going forward.

APPENDIX TO ANNEX 1

INDEPENDENT EXPERT PANEL POSITION STATEMENT
REPORT OF PROGRESS (8 NOV 2019)

The Independent Expert panel, has analysed IPCC capability to conduct a rigorous Inquiry of the policing of protest in Hong Kong, and indicated a shortfall in IPCC powers, capacity, and independent investigative capability necessary to match the scale of events and the standards required of an international police watchdog operating in a society that values freedoms and rights.

The Independent Expert Panel conducted a stock-take this week which reveals some advance by the IPCC Taskforce, but structural limitations in the scope and powers of the IPCC Inquiry remain, inhibiting its ability to establish a coherent and representative body of evidence.

The stock-take concludes that the IPCC needs to substantially enhance its capacity: to assemble a coherent account of the facts from police and other bodies; to access important documents and validate accounts supplied by police and others in a timely fashion; and to significantly improve its capability to identify and secure evidence from key witnesses from outside policing.

Given the scale of events in Hong Kong it remains to be seen whether a light touch, oversight body like the IPCC, can make sufficient progress to produce any decisive contribution to an account of developments, that might enable necessary policy changes in policing practice.

As a group we believe it may be possible to provide an interim report with limited, but sufficient facts to allow preliminary conclusions to be drawn on some of the drivers of protest, the handling of key events, and the evolution of the disturbances.

But for that to happen, the IPCC will have to revise its resources and processes. It remains to be seen by whether it can do this in short order. If it can, we believe it may provide a compelling case for the next steps including a deeper more comprehensive inquiry in a number of respects by an independent body with requisite powers, but also enable action to commence on improvements that can be made in the shorter term.

ANNEX 2

Ref. Number

獨立監察警方處理投訴委員會
Independent Police Complaints Council

呼籲提供資料

Call for Information

監警會現根據監警會條例第 8(1)(c)條呼籲公眾就自 2019 年 6 月 9 日之大型公眾活動向本會提供資料。
Pursuant to S. 8 (1)(c) of the Independent Police Complaints Council Ordinance, IPCC would like to call for information from members of the public regarding the public order events (POEs) since 9 June 2019.

本會收集資料的目的是為重組有關公眾活動的重要事實以及評估警方就事件的處理。
The purpose of collecting the information is to reconstruct the material facts of the events and to assess the police handling.

這份表格只用作提供資料給監警會，並不會用作舉報罪案或提出投訴。如閣下欲向警方作出投訴，請聯絡投訴警察課 (https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_tc/11_useful_info/cap.html)，或就罪案向警方舉報 (https://www1.erc.police.gov.hk/cmiserc/CCC/PolicePublicPage?language=ch)。 This form is only used for providing information to IPCC. This is not for complaint or crime reporting purpose. If you wish to make a complaint against police, please contact Complaints Against Police Office (https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_en/11_useful_info/cap.html), or report the crime to the Hong Kong Police Force (https://www1.erc.police.gov.hk/cmiserc/CCC/PolicePublicPage?language=en).

你的個人資料不會在未得你同意的情況下轉交或披露予第三者。然而，若監警會認為適合或有必要，經此電郵所提供給監警會的錄影或相片有可能於日後公開。
While all your personal information will not be transferred or disclosed to any other party without your consent, the videos or photos provided via this email address may be later disclosed to public where IPCC considers appropriate or necessary in discharging its functions.

☐ 明白及同意
I understand and agree

個人資料 Personal Particulars

英文姓名 Name (English)*	姓氏 Surname		名字 Other names	
中文姓名 Name (Chinese)*				

聯絡方法 Contact Means*

電話 Phone			傳真 Fax			
住址 Address						
年齡 Age		性別 Gender	請選擇 Please Select	國籍 Nationality		
職業 Occupation	請選擇 Please Select					
是否代表機構提供資料 Are you a representative of an organization to submit the information?						
☐ 是 Yes, 機構名稱 Name of Organization:				☐ 否 No		

資料提供乃自願性質。提供姓名和聯絡方法會有助本會於需要時與你聯絡。

*The provision of all above data is voluntary. Name and contact means are not mandatory, but it will help us to contact you if necessary.

Next Page

事件詳情 Incident Details

事件日期 Incident Date		事件時間(時:分)Incident Time(hh:mm)	
事件地點 Incident Location			
地區 District	請選擇Please Select		
街道 Street	請選擇Please Select		
大廈 Building	請選擇Please Select		

事件詳細資訊* Incident Details*

已向警方舉報? Crime Report to Police?	☐	是，警察檔案編號: Yes, Police reference no:		☐ 否 No
已向投訴警察課投訴? Complaint against Police made to Police?	☐	是,投訴警察課編號#: Yes ,CAPO RN Number#:		☐ 否 No
資料來源 Source of information	請選擇Please Select			
附件 Attachment	如欲就你所提供的資料提交任何補充附件 / 文件，請於提交此表格時一併以電郵方式遞交。 If you would like to supplement any attachments / documents in relation to the information you provided, please submit along with this form via email			
附件來源 Source of attachment	請選擇Please Select			

*在陳述有關事實時，你無需透露可能負擔刑事責任的內容

#如閣下提供投訴編號，在這表格上的相關資料可能會被用作處理該投訴。

*In giving a truthful account, you need not reveal facts which may incriminate yourself.

#If you provide the reference number of the complaint case, the relevent information given in this form may be used for the purpose of handling that complaint.

Next Page

免責聲明 (請在合適的方格內填上「√」號)
Disclaimer (Please tick the boxes where appropriate.)

☐ 本人明白現所提交的資料並不會用作提出投訴或舉報罪案的用途。
I understand that the submission of this information is NOT for complaint or crime report purpose.

☐ 本人明白本人的個人資料可能會被用作輯錄統計數據，但不會在未得本人同意的情況下轉交或披露予第三者。如本人欲更改個人資料，可以透過電郵聯絡 enq@ipcc.gov.hk
I understand that my personal data may be used for compilation of statistics and will not be transferred or disclosed to any other party without my consent.   If I wish to amend my personal data, I may contact IPCC at enq@ipcc.gov.hk.

☐ 我不希望監警會聯絡本人。
I do **NOT** wish IPCC to contact me.

Submit

SUMMARY OF INFORMATION PROVIDED BY THE PUBLIC

1. With regard to public response to the appeal for provision of information for this Study, the IPCC received 12 217 emails enclosing 2 562 photos and 3 347 videos (including 9 838 similar or template emails supporting the police officer's firing of live round at Tsuen Wan on 1 October), and a total of 20 988 photos and 19 186 videos from 658 WhatsApp users. It is observed that:

(a) most photos and videos received are apparently snapshots of live news which are linked on open platforms e.g. YouTube and social media; and

(b) over 75% of the photos/videos received are similar or duplicate copies sent by different members of the public.

2. A table showing the distribution of photos and videos received on major incident dates is appended below:

Date	Event	Photo	Video
2019-06-09	Clash outside the LegCo Complex, after a procession on Hong Kong Island	730	699
2019-06-12	Clash outside the LegCo Complex, after POEs in nearby area	1 460	1 397
2019-07-01	Storming of the LegCo Complex, after procession on Hong Kong Island	1 366	1 307
2019-07-07	Procession in Kowloon	895	856
2019-07-13	Procession in Sheung Shui	824	789
2019-07-14	Procession in Sha Tin, descending into clashes in New Town Plaza	1 060	1 014
2019-07-21	Protest in Sheung Wan, after a procession on Hong Kong Island ; Yuen Long Incident	1 295	1 239
2019-07-27	Rally and procession in Yuen Long	824	789
2019-07-28	Procession on Hong Kong Island	895	856
2019-07-30	Siege of Kwai Chung and Tin Shui Wai Police Stations	683	653
2019-08-03	Protests in Kowloon, after procession in Mong Kok	1 130	1 082
2019-08-04	Protests in various districts, after processions in Tseung Kwan O and Western District	918	879
2019-08-05	General strike and protests in seven districts	1 154	1 104

Date	Event	Photo	Video
2019-08-10	Procession without LoNO in Tai Po, followed by flash protests in various districts in New Territories and Kowloon, with rallies on Hong Kong Island	447	428
2019-08-11	Rally on Hong Kong Island and procession without LoNO in Sham Shui Po, followed by protests and clashes in Tsim Sha Tsui, Causeway Bay and other districts including Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations	1 083	1 037
2019-08-24	Public procession and meeting in Kwun Tong, leading to protests in various districts in Kowloon	801	766
2019-08-25	Public meetings and procession in Kwai Tsing, leading to protests in Tsuen Wan, Sham Shui Po and other districts	848	811
2019-08-31	Procession without LoNO on Hong Kong Island and protests in various locations on Hong Kong Island and in Kowloon including the incident at Prince Edward Station	1 319	1 262
2019-09-01	Protests at the Hong Kong International Airport and other districts	565	541
2019-09-14	Disputes in Amoy Garden, Ngau Tau Kok	683	653
2019-09-15	Procession without LoNO in Causeway Bay, leading to protests on Hong Kong Island	801	766
2019-10-01	Procession without LoNO on Hong Kong Island, along with protests in various districts including Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Yau Tsim Mong; a police officer firing a live round hitting a 18-year-old male on his chest	659	631
2019-10-04	Protests in various districts against the Anti-mask Law; a plainclothes police officer was attacked and set on fire briefly by a petrol bomb, the attack led to a live shot by the officer hitting a 14-year-old male's thigh	754	721
2019-10-13	Territory-wide protests at shopping malls	989	946
2019-11-04	A university student fell down from a storey in a carpark near police dispersal operation in Tseung Kwan O; the fall led to brain injury and death of the student on 8 November 2019	424	406

Date	Event	Photo	Video
2019-11-11	Protests leading to citywide traffic disruptions; a 21-year-old male was hit at right abdomen by a live round shot in Sai Wan Ho; a 57-year-old male was set on fire following an argument with a group of protesters in Ma On Shan	330	315
2019-11-12	Continuation of citywide protests aiming to paralyse transport network, day-long clash at CUHK with subsequent disruption to traffic to and from Tai Po on Tolo Highway till 16 November 2019	330	315
2019-11-17	Day-long clash in Hung Hom and Tsim Sha Tsui near PolyU campus; Police cordoned off PolyU campus from 17 November night till around noon of 29 November 2019	283	271
Total		**23 550**	**22 533**

CHAPTER 4

AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Introduction

4.1 Since June 2019, Hong Kong has faced its most challenging public order situation in a generation. This Study aims to enable the IPCC to understand this situation, so that it may better perform its statutory duties under section 8 of the IPCC Ordinance.

4.2 A good starting point is the description of the situation from June to October 2019, made by the Court of Appeal (CA) in its Judgment handed down on 9 April 2020 on the Judicial Review brought by 26 current Members of the Legislative Council (LegCo) and one former Member.[1] The description, based on evidence placed before the CA and unchallenged by the Applicants in the Judicial Review, is as follows:

> *"1. Since June 2019, Hong Kong has experienced serious social unrests and public disorders marked by protests, escalating violence, vandalisms and arsons across the territory. It is a dire situation that has not been seen in the last 50 years.*
>
> *2. The increasing violence has resulted in widespread property damage, assaults on persons, serious damage and interruptions to major public transport facilities and highways. The violence and damage are mostly caused by protestors wearing masks and dressed in black outfits. At the same time, it is a common phenomenon that many other protestors participating in public assemblies and processions who are not involved in violence are also wearing masks and dressed in black outfits.*
>
> …
>
> *14. Most pertinently, the uncontested evidence shows that the outbreaks of violence are escalated by the more radical and violent protestors employing the "black-bloc" tactics[2] to avoid identification and arrests, who are to a certain extent supported or at least condoned (and hence emboldened) by protestors who*

1 CACV 541, 542, 583/2019. Footnotes 2 to 7 are reproduced from the Judgment of the Court of Appeal handed down on 9 April 2020.

2 "Black-bloc" tactics is where the protestors would often appear in groups and wear black clothing with little or not distinguishable feature, and cover the whole or a substantial part of their faces with sunglasses, goggles, masks, or respirators etc. See the Affirmation of Cheung Tin Lok at [8] - [9].

participate in initially peaceful public assemblies or processions. Such tactics is facilitated in light of the following[3]*:*

(1) Public order events are highly fluid in nature. A public meeting or procession that is initially lawful and peaceful can quickly turn into an unauthorized or unlawful assembly.

(2) The most violent and radical protestors are those who have their faces covered and therefore their identities concealed. They are also often equipped with gas masks and refuse to disperse even when the police deploy tear gas.

(3) These radical and violent protestors with their faces covered often mix themselves into a larger group of protestors (taking part in a largely peaceful public meeting or procession) who are also wearing masks. This has rendered identification most difficult when the violent protestors with their faces concealed can easily slip away amidst the chaos they have aroused.

(4) The more radical and violent protestors are often supported by many less violent protestors (also wearing facial covers to avoid recognition) by, for example, the provision of resources (such as food and water), tools and even weapons, as well as free rides when the police are taking actions of dispersal and arrests.

(5) Moreover, the more radical and violent protestors committing criminal conducts are encouraged by and find it essential to regard that they have the support or back-up of those peaceful protestors who themselves are also wearing face covering masks and present at the public assemblies or processions.

(6) In this respect, as the expert evidence shows[4]*, mask functions as a facilitator of anonymity. When anonymity joins with group function, participants' responsibilities become easily diffused or shared. Individuals tend to feel they are being supported by a lot of people. This is an emboldenment effect. If the dominant group value or purpose in the situation is anti-social, the individual will conform to that and more likely to act antisocially.*[5]

---

3 See, in particular, the Affirmation of Cheung Tin Lok at [20] - [24] and [31].

4 See the Affidavit of Dr Tsui, Pui Wan Ephraem at [17].

5 The word "anti-social" refers to acting against larger social norms which, within the group, can be their own emerging group norm. It implies that the person is not really losing his self in the group, but is just following the group norm.

15. Large scale incidents of breach of peace in Hong Kong ensued. In blatant defiance of the law, the more radical and violent protestors have perpetrated widespread criminal conducts ranging from unlawful assembly to serious property damage, assault on persons, arsons and use of lethal weapons.

16. The unchallenged evidence shows that from 9 June to 4 October 2019, violent and radical protestors had:[6]

(1) forcefully and repeatedly charged police cordon lines with the use of weapons whilst protected by body armour, and blocked roads and tunnels (including main thoroughfares) with various objects which had resulted in persons trapped with or in their vehicles and, on some occasions, attacked drivers who voiced displeasure at such blockages;

(2) vandalised and wrecked serious damage to public facilities (such as pavements, roadside fences and barriers, signages, dust bins, lamp posts, traffic lights, street lights and CCTV cameras, etc) and Government buildings (such as the Legislative Council Complex, Police Headquarters, Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices, etc), set fire by burning public properties outside or at police stations and on the streets in multiple districts, and hurled inflammable liquid bombs at police vehicles, police stations and even police officers and at and within the MTR stations;

(3) damaged private shopping malls, shops and restaurants, etc; there were also reports of looting and theft in some of the shops that were damaged;

(4) damaged residential quarters and harassed residents of the same;

(5) crippled the operations of critical transport infrastructure including the Hong Kong International Airport, a large number of the MTR stations and tracks (notwithstanding and in breach of relevant injunctive orders in place, and at the same time causing massive, serious and repeated destruction of facilities in the MTR stations resulting in the closure of multiple MTR stations due to safety concerns and the need for urgent repair as well as taking

6 Moreover: (a) the use of inflammable liquid bombs has become more frequent and extensive, and even more so since late September 2019. On 29 September and 1 October 2019, the number of inflammable liquid bombs hurled by the protestors were respectively around 100 and over 100; (b) on 1 October 2019, a police officer was injured by protestors throwing corrosive liquid at him, causing a third degree burn; (c) on the same date, some police officers were seen viciously attacked by large groups of protestors by a range of objects and lethal weapons, and a few of them whose lives were under imminent threat had to defend themselves with firearms; (d) as at 4 October 2019, a total of 2 135 individuals have been arrested for taking part in public order events of an unlawful or criminal nature, or being involved in other unlawful or criminal activities. See the unchallenged evidence in the Affirmation of Cheung Tin Lok at [4] - [6], and the Affidavit of Chui Shih Yen, Joceline at [26] - [28].

deliberate acts to stop or delay MTR trains from operating during morning rush), and the Cross-Harbour Tunnel, etc;

(6) harassed and attacked ordinary citizens and police officers holding different political views by a range of objects and lethal weapons, such as high-powered laser pointers (which were sometimes shone directly into the eyes of the victim from a short distance), sling shots and catapults to launch a variety of projectiles, sharp or sharpened objects (including box cutters and sharpened bamboo poles), bricks and inflammable liquid bombs etc, causing numerous injuries of various degree; and

(7) stopped vehicles and threatened drivers with damage to their vehicles to force them to yield up their mobile telephones for examination or to pay the protestors a sum of money.

17. The evidence therefore has shown that by the beginning of October 2019, the above acts of radical and violent protesters had seriously breached public peace, and posed a grave and genuine danger to the police and other members of the public. Normal functions of the Hong Kong community had been severely disrupted. More importantly, there were signs of and even declared intent by violent protestors to procure further escalation in the degree of violence and vandalism in unlawful assemblies which might as a result turn into riots, pushing Hong Kong to a most perilous situation.[7]"

4.3 This indeed was the situation the community suffered during the protests. However, the protests, the violence and the vandalism did not stop with October 2019. They continued with ferocity, easing off only when the community was stricken by COVID-19, and even then, sporadic violent protests still break out in the streets. Although there is no published estimate of the overall costs of the direct and indirect destruction wrought by the protests, some information offers an indication of the scope and scale of the damage caused directly or indirectly by the protests to private property, Government and public property, traffic infrastructure, MTR network, injury to civilians, the economy at large and the general crime situation during the protests in Hong Kong. A list of damage and impact available to the IPCC from the public and the Police is at Annex 1.

4.4 Such costs are significant with lasting consequences to the economy. Other less visible, intangible losses would be the departure of corporations from our city and the loss of companies intending to set up offices here. In sum, the detriment to our economy and to our

7 See the Affirmation of Cheung Tin Lok at [5] - [6] on the statistics and descriptions showing the significant increase and extensive use of inflammable liquid bombs by the protestors, attacks on police officers and individuals who held different views with the protestors, and the growing degree of violence and vandalism.

reputation worldwide is incalculable.

Events Giving Rise to the Public Order Events (POEs)

4.5 The event which triggered the incidents over the past months was the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The Fugitive Offenders Bill was proposed by the Government in February 2019 for the surrender arrangement of fugitives between the Mainland, Taiwan, Macau and the HKSAR. Although the Government did make various amendments to the Fugitive Offenders Bill to allay the concern of different sectors, there remained the fear among some that the Fugitive Offenders Bill might be used to transfer political dissidents to the Mainland. This gave rise to POEs, initially peaceful, against the Fugitive Offenders Bill. In addition to processions by certain members of the legal profession, the Civil Human Rights Front (CHRF) launched public processions on two Sundays, 31 March[8] and 28 April 2019[9] respectively. Both events were peaceful with estimated 12 000 and 130 000 participants, while the Police estimated 5 200 and 22 800 at the peak. These would pale into insignificance against those in the months to follow.

4.6 After the first reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill, there was such serious division of views within LegCo and prolonged filibustering in debates that it was impossible ever to set up a Bills Committee despite four meetings between mid-April and mid-May 2019.[10] As a result, the Secretary for Security (S for S) announced on 20 May 2019 the Government's decision to take the Fugitive Offenders Bill directly to the Plenary Council Meeting on 12 June 2019 for a Second Reading debate, bypassing the Bills Committee stage.[11] Against the background of this extraordinary arrangement, CHRF organised a third procession in protest on the afternoon of Sunday 9 June 2019. This would start from Victoria Park and proceed to Central Government Complex (CGC) for a public meeting there that evening. The Police issued a Letter of No Objection (LoNO) for both the public procession and the public meeting on 9 June 2019 up to 23:59. The first clashes between the Police and some violent protesters took place that evening after the procession of 9 June 2019. Meanwhile, CHRF also called upon protesters to besiege

---

8 SCMP (2019-03-31). Thousands take to Hong Kong streets against proposal to extradite suspects to mainland China. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3004031/thousands-take-hong-kong-streets-against-proposal-extradite

9 SCMP (2019-04-28). Estimated 130,000 protesters join march against proposed extradition law that will allow transfer of fugitives from Hong Kong to mainland China. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3007999/thousands-set-join-protest-march-against-proposed

10 RTHK News (2019-04-03). 逃犯修訂條例草案首讀及二讀　民主派高叫「撤回惡法」. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1451120-20190403.htm

11 Secretary for Security's letter dated 20 May 2019. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/english/hc/papers/hccb2-1491-1-e.pdf

News.gov.hk (2019-05-20). Fugitive bill reading requested. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/eng/2019/05/20190520/20190520_153733_565.html

the LegCo Complex on 12 June 2019, to frustrate the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill.



Image 4-1: An online post on 11 June 2019 calling for occupying the LegCo Complex to frustrate the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.7 The introduction of the Fugitive Offenders Bill was a decision on the part of the Government. Some in LegCo and in the community saw political implications and raised objection. It is open to the community to protest against it peacefully: it is a right protected by law.

The Role of the Police

4.8 The responsibility of the Police is for law enforcement, quite separate from any political considerations that may be attached to the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The role, and therefore the actions, of the Police in this instance are the same as for any other disturbance of law and order requiring their presence. The IPCC is well aware and has been reminded by the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) that the Police plays no part in politics. This is evidenced by the statement of the Deputy Commissioner of Police, Management at the United Nations (UN) Commission of Human Rights:

"These violent criminals preached to their followers that the end justifies the means; that breaking the law to achieve their goals was a noble cause. Police officers are not there to

judge whether their proclaimed cause is a just one, or if it even makes sense. We don't have to. We are police officers. Our one and only mission is to find out whether anyone has committed a crime. If someone breaks the law, it is our lawful duty to stop him and arrest him. Whether a cause is altruistic or in fact self-serving is completely irrelevant to us. The law demands that we arrest them. The basic premise of the rule of law is that. No one is above the law. This is why I and the other 30 000 members of the Hong Kong Police have all taken the solemn oath to serve as police officers, without fear of or favour to any person and with malice or ill-will towards none. This is the truth about Hong Kong.[12]*"*

4.9 The Police performs duties prescribed by the Police Force Ordinance (PFO). In relation to protests, the Police has a central role in law enforcement under the Public Order Ordinance (POO). In addition, the Police has the duty to arrest persons who, in the course of protests, have committed offences under the laws of the HKSAR and give assistance to the Department of Justice in bringing offenders to trial before the Courts of the HKSAR.

The Scope of this Chapter

4.10 While peaceful protest against Government policy and actions is protected by law, the violence the community has seen in the streets of Hong Kong is not lawful behaviour. The Police, as the law enforcement agent designated to maintain law and order in Hong Kong, has to discharge its police duty in law. In this connection, many complaints have been made against the actions of police officers. These have to be seen with the perspective and against the backdrop of the events of the past months, which have necessitated the Police exercising the powers conferred by law.

4.11 On the basis of the information available to the IPCC, this Chapter will look at the following facets, first in the form of a statistical overview and then, as a monthly analysis:

(a) The events surrounding the Fugitive Offenders Bill that gave rise to the POEs;
(b) Escalation of the POEs since 9 June 2019 with the progress of time (month by month), in terms of:

    (i) The frequency of the POEs,
    (ii) The scale of the POEs, and
    (iii) The general level of violence;

(c) Major protests and events widely covered by the media and circulated on the internet

[12] Statement by Deputy Commissioner of Police, Mr. Oscar Kwok, to the UN Human Rights Commission, 9 March 2020.

that propelled the unrest;

(d) The violent acts of the protesters, including vandalising shopping malls, MTR station facilities, setting on fire shops and branches of Mainland companies and banks, attacking police officers, vigilantism on people with opposing views;

(e) The weapons and tactics of the violent protesters;

(f) Police use of force in response to the acts of the violent protesters; and

(g) The messages and propaganda on the internet that continued to fuel the violent protests:

  (i) Appealing and mobilising people to take part in protests and to resort to violence;
  (ii) Sharing information to act in concert to assist the violent protesters clashes with the Police;
  (iii) Teaching people to make weapons, such as petrol bombs;
  (iv) Disseminating untrue or unverified information;
  (v) Attacking Government Offices;
  (vi) Vandalising pro-Government corporations;
  (vii) Tracking the movements of police officers on duty;
  (viii) Doxxing police officers and their family members; and
  (ix) Inciting hatred against the Police.

POEs from June 2019 to February 2020: A Statistical Overview

4.12 The public of Hong Kong has the freedom of public assembly subject to regulation under the POO. Sections 7 to 9 and 13 to 14 of the POO require organisers to notify the Commissioner of intended public meetings and processions, and the Police is obliged to issue a LoNO with or without conditions, unless the Police for the reasons set out in the POO issues a Letter of Objection. The POO provides for appeal in the event of Police objection to an Appeal Board on Public Meetings and Processions of independent persons chaired by a retired Justice of the High Court of the HKSAR. An approved public meeting/ procession referred to in this Study would be a meeting/ procession with a LoNO. An unapproved public meeting/ procession would either be one not notified or one with Police objection either unappealed or upheld on appeal. Procedures for notification of public meeting/ procession are well known and the Police has a website catering to persons or organisations intending to organise public meetings/ procession.[13]

4.13 Between June 2019 and February 2020, there were 300 applications for LoNO, of which 252 were issued. 48 Letters of Objection with reasons were given, as Table 4-1 will show.

13 Public Order Events Support: https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_en/11_useful_info/licences/poess.html

	Jun 2019	Jul 2019	Aug 2019	Sep 2019	Oct 2019	Nov 2019	Dec 2019	Jan 2020	Feb 2020	Total
Public Meeting with LoNO	17	33	52	18	7	20	31	14	0	**192**
Public Procession with LoNO	3	19	23	3	0	5	5	2	0	**60**
Prohibited Public Meeting	1	3	10	5	4	2	0	1	0	**26**
Objected Public Procession	0	3	9	3	3	2	0	2	0	**22**
Total number of notification	***21***	***58***	***94***	***29***	***14***	***29***	***36***	***19***	***0***	***300***
Object rate (%)	***5%***	***10%***	***20%***	***28%***	***50%***	***14%***	***0%***	***16%***	***---***	***16%***

Table 4-1 Notifiable and Notified POEs in relation to Fugitive Offenders Bill
(from June 2019 to February 2020)
(Information provided by HKPF)

4.14 A list of reported POEs from June 2019 to February 2020 is given in the table at Annex 2.

4.15 As of February 2020, the violent protests against the Fugitive Offenders Bill since June 2019 have led to 7 613 arrests. Police action in response to the violent protests have given rise to 542 Reportable Complaints (RCs) and 1 099 Notifiable Complaints (NCs), making a total of 1 641 complaints. The breakdown of these figures by month is given in Tables 4-2 and 4-3 below.

	Jun 2019	Jul 2019	Aug 2019	Sep 2019	Oct 2019	Nov 2019	Dec 2019	Jan 2020	Feb 2020	Total
Number of Arrests	73	224	751	764	1 189	2 899	698	669	346	**7 613**

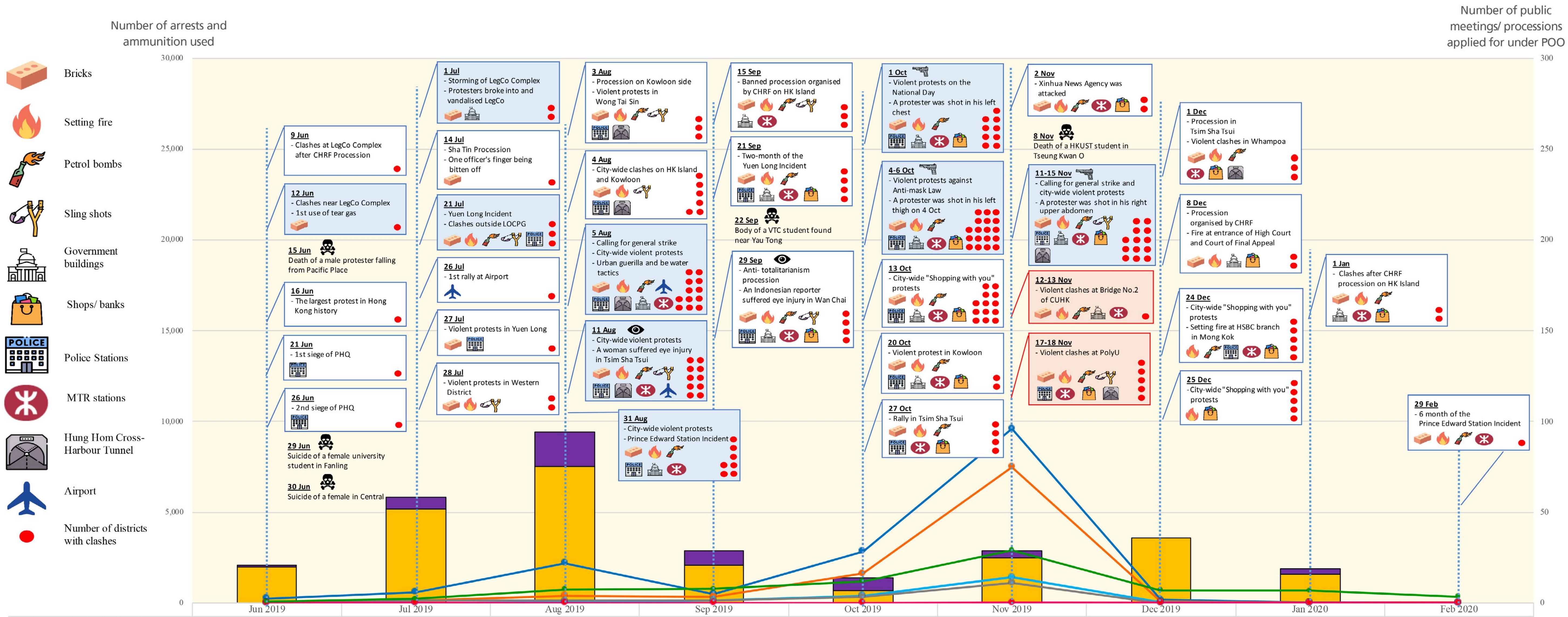
Table 4-2: Number of arrests by month
(Information provided by HKPF)

	Jun 2019	Jul 2019	Aug 2019	Sep 2019	Oct 2019	Nov 2019	Dec 2019	Jan 2020	Feb 2020	Total
RC	57	78	93	66	88	120	30	10	0	**542**
NC	80	150	153	149	188	218	101	60	0	**1 099**
RC+NC	137	228	246	215	276	338	131	70	0	**1 641**

Table 4-3: Number of complaints by month

4.16 Major POEs together with information on the violence encountered and the use of weapons by the Police in response for the same period are given in Chart 4-1.

An Overview of the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill



	Jun 2019	Jul 2019	Aug 2019	Sep 2019	Oct 2019	Nov 2019	Dec 2019	Jan 2020	Feb 2020
Objected Public Meetings/ Processions	1	6	19	8	7	4	0	3	0
Approved Public Meetings/ Processions	20	52	75	21	7	25	36	16	0
Objection Rate	5%	10%	20%	28%	50%	14%	0%	16%	-
Tear gas	240	608	2,187	492	2,848	9,597	166	24	29
Rubber round	19	134	405	348	1,625	7,479	66	9	15
Super sock round	3	3	43	139	386	1,425	27	6	1
React round	33	114	130	132	350	1,104	10	7	0
Live round	0	0	3	1	7	8	0	0	0
Number of arrests	73	224	751	764	1,189	2,899	698	669	346
Number of officers injured	34	93	95	62	101	119	49	27	12

Icons made by Darius Dan, Freepik, Kiranshastry, photo3idea_studio, Pixel perfect, smalllikeart, Smashicons, Vectors Market from www.flaticon.com

Note: [blue box] indicates significant incidents. [red box] indicates the most violent clashes.

Disclaimer: The information contained in this chart is accurate to the best of the knowledge of the IPCC based on available information.

Chart 4-1: An Overview of the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill since June 2019

Protests in June 2019:

June 2019						
Sun	**Mon**	**Tue**	**Wed**	**Thu**	**Fri**	**Sat**
						1
2	3	4	5	6	7	8
9 CHRF Procession *(1.03 million)* * Clashes at the LegCo Complex	10	11	12 Scheduled Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill Clashes near the LegCo Complex	13	14	15 Death of a male protester outside Pacific Place
16 CHRF Procession *(2 million)* *	17	18	19	20	21 First siege of PHQ	22
23	24	25	26 Second siege of PHQ	27	28	29
30						

* Figures according to organiser

Highlights of June 2019

- **The beginnings of violence, from pushing and shoving by a small number of protesters on 9 June 2019, extended to attacking police officers with umbrellas and metal poles, and hurling bricks and hard objects by a large number of violent protesters on 12 June 2019.**
- **Police Headquarters (PHQ) was besieged by protesters on 21 and 26 June 2019.**

<u>Sunday 9 June 2019 – Clashes at the LegCo Complex after CHRF Procession</u>

4.17 The night of 9 June 2019 saw the beginnings of violence in the protests. Prior to 9 June 2019, there were messages on the internet inciting people to throw water bottles, bricks, stones and even petrol bombs during the protest that day. Tutorials online gave guidance on making petrol bombs.[14] CHRF, and two political groups, namely Hong Kong Independence Union and Studentlocalism, called for protesters to stay behind at the CGC area to rehearse laying siege to the LegCo Complex. These two groups were established among younger people for political reform after the "Occupy Movement (OCM)" in 2014.



Image 4-2: An LIHKG post on 9 June 2019, with an image showing how to make petrol bombs
(Image source: LIHKG)

[14] LIHKG (2019-06-09). ［抗爭手冊］End game 前準備. Retrieved from https://lihkg.com/thread/1193418/page/1



Image 4-3: A propaganda on CHRF's Facebook promoting the public procession
to be held on 9 June 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.18 The procession on 9 June 2019 was generally peaceful and orderly with 1.03 million people taking part according to CHRF, while the Police counted 240 000 at the peak. After the procession, hundreds of protesters remained outside the LegCo Complex while a few hundred gathered at Harcourt Road, outside Admiralty Centre. At 23:07, the Government issued a press release acknowledging the large turnout of the march and announcing the Second Reading debate on the Fugitive Offenders Bill to be held on 12 June 2019. This message changed the atmosphere outside the LegCo Complex.

4.19 Around midnight, hundreds of violent protesters charged on the Police cordon line at the designated demonstration area of the LegCo Complex. They threw iron rods, metal barriers, water bottles and other hard objects at the police officers. In response, the police officers used batons, oleoresin capsicum (OC) Foam (i.e. pepper spray) and pelargonic acid vanillylamide (PAVA)solution (i.e. pepper liquid) to hold back the violent protesters. Some of the protesters fled to Tim Mei Avenue, Lung Wui Road, Lung Wo Road and Gloucester Road, blocking those roads. Around 02:50, the Police concluded dispersal action with 358 protesters hemmed in outside old Wan Chai Police Station. They were allowed to leave after being searched and their personal particulars recorded by the Police.



Image 4-4: Clash scenes at the LegCo Complex "Drum" area on 9 June 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.20 The violence in the clashes on 9 June 2019 was of a much lower level than that in the clashes in subsequent protests. The gear worn or used by both the violent protesters and the police officers on 9 June 2019 was comparatively light. Only about half of the protesters had surgical masks and only a few were in black outfits with masks, goggles and helmets. The police officers at the cordon line were in standard uniform. Even the Special Tactical Contingent officers later deployed to the scene were not in full riot gear.

4.21 Chapter 7 contains a detailed study of the Incident on 9 June 2019.

Wednesday 12 June 2019 – Clashes near LegCo Complex

4.22 Calls for escalation of protest against the Fugitive Offenders Bill continued to circulate on the internet. On 10 June 2019, messages appeared on the internet calling for people to "picnic" at the Tamar Park and take part in a strike starting from 11 June 2019. CHRF also announced their plan to host public meetings against the Fugitive Offenders Bill[15], starting from 10:00 of 12 June 2019 until the end of the Second Reading, which the LegCo President had scheduled to be held on 20 June 2019.[16] There were also calls on the internet to escalate the

[15] On 10 June 2019, CHRF announced that they planned to hold a public meeting against the Fugitive Offenders Bill at the LegCo Complex "Drum" area on 12 June. On 11 June, LegCo, after consultation with the Police on the security arrangement, closed the LegCo Complex "Drum" area until further notice. The CHRF assembly eventually took place on the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road on 12 June as per the LoNO of the Police.

[16] According to LegCo's press release on 11 June 2019, LegCo President announced that 61 hours were reserved for the Second Reading debate of the Fugitive Offenders Bill commencing on 12 June and the last time slot for the debate was on 20 June. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/chinese/press/pr20190611-2.html (Chinese only)

level of violence, including storming of the LegCo Complex on 12 June 2019, to oppose the Fugitive Offenders Bill.[17]



Image 4-5: LIHKG posts calling for "picnic" and a general strike on 11 and 12 June 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

4.23 Beginning in the early morning on 12 June 2019, the day scheduled for the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill, tens of thousands of protesters gathered in the Admiralty area around CGC and the LegCo Complex paralysing the traffic network, impeding LegCo Members from entering CGC and the LegCo Complex. In that morning, some protesters pried up bricks from the pavement, took away iron bars from the nearby construction sites and dismantled iron rods from the pavement railings. At 10:50, the LegCo Secretariat announced that the meeting for the Second Reading scheduled for 11:00 would be postponed to a time to be determined by the President.

---

17 Bastillepost (2019-06-11). 激進份子計劃包圍立法會 網傳商討襲擊警方「速龍隊」. Retrieved from https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4529691



Image 4-6: CGC area at 10:10 of 12 June 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.24 On the internet, protesters had given an ultimatum for the Government to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill by 15:00; otherwise, protest action will be escalated. When the time reached 15:00, a few hundred protesters wearing helmets, masks, cling film and goggles began pushing the mills barriers[18] at Police cordon lines outside CGC and throwing bricks, water bottles, umbrellas, helmets and other hard objects at the police officers holding these lines. The Police initially defended with batons, OC Foam, and PAVA solution, eventually in the face of the protesters' mounting violence, the Police fired tear gas and less-lethal projectiles (including rubber rounds, super sock rounds and react rounds) to disperse them. At 15:30, the Police declared the situation a riot. The turmoil continued until midnight. The Police had fired a total of 240 rounds of tear gas, 19 rubber rounds, three super sock rounds and 33 react rounds.

18 Mills barriers are metal barriers with 1 metre high and 2 metres long usually interlocked with one another to form a line for crowd control purposes.



Image 4-7: Online ultimatum for the HKSAR to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill by 15:00 of 12 June 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.25 A detailed study of the events of 12 June 2019 is at Chapter 8.

Protesters' Focus Evolved towards Allegations of Police Violence/ Brutality

4.26 After the event on 12 June 2019, the public / protesters' focus evolved. Public sentiment was directed not only towards the Government about the Fugitive Offenders Bill, but also towards the Police about alleged "police violence / brutality" on 12 June 2019. The next day, CHRF condemned the Police action on 12 June 2019 on its Facebook.[19] On the same post, CHRF also announced that they had applied for LoNO to hold another procession 16 June

[19] Facebook (2019-06-13). 民間人權陣線 Civil Human Rights Front. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/CivilHumanRightsFront/photos/a.517931904920872/2300277366686308/?type=3&theater

2019 and a public meeting outside the LegCo Complex on 17 June 2019 and called for a General Strike. On 14 June 2019, CHRF further appealed to the public to join the events, with slogans such as "Let us be united. Say NO to police violence and China Extradition".[20] Information was also circulated on the internet, such as hand signals, for communicating among protesters.[21] Clear and comprehensive hand signals were noted during subsequent events.[22]

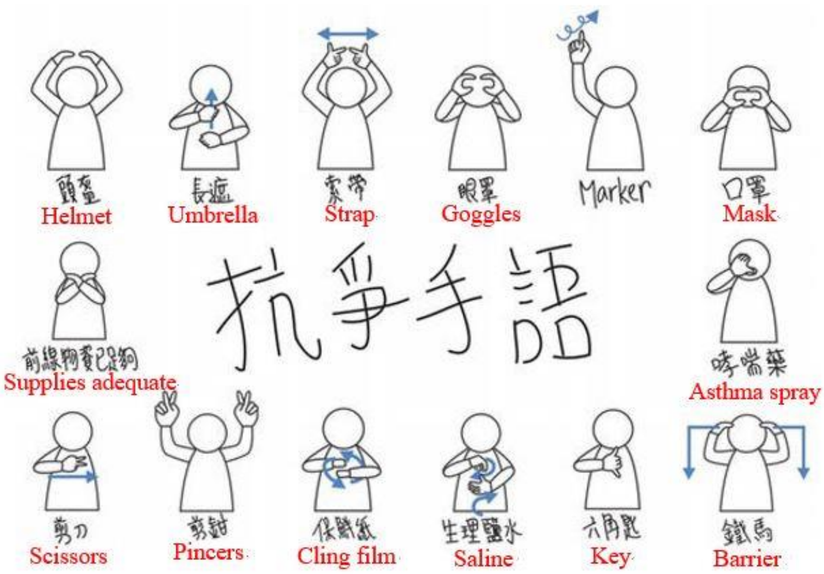


Image 4-8: Hand signals for protests shared on the internet on 14 June 2019
(English translation added)
(Image source: LIHKG)

20 Facebook (2019-06-14). 民間人權陣線 Civil Human Rights Front. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/CivilHumanRightsFront/posts/we-want-withdrawal-onlytear-gas-bombs-did-not-disperse-usbean-bag-shots-did-not-/2303776066336438/

21 LIHKG (2019-06-14). 整左 set 常用《抗爭手語》請大家幫手傳播. Retrieved from https://lihkg.com/thread/1220151/page/1

22 SCMP (2019-07-05). How Hong Kong protesters used hand signals to communicate in July 1 anti-extradition bill demonstration. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/video/hong-kong/3017473/how-hong-kong-protesters-used-hand-signals-communicate-july-1-anti

Saturday 15 June - Bill Suspension /A Protester Fell to His Death in Admiralty on 15 June

4.27 On 15 June 2019, the Government announced the suspension of the Fugitive Offenders Bill.[23] An hour and a half after the announcement, a protester in yellow raincoat climbed onto the podium of Pacific Place in Admiralty to hang a banner calling for complete withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill. Hours later, he climbed onto a scaffolding on the outer wall of Pacific Place. Before officers from Fire Services Department (FSD) could reach him, he fell to his death.[24] Very quickly, messages appeared on the internet holding the Government responsible for the death of a "烈士" (martyr).[25] His yellow raincoat soon became an icon for the subsequent protests.[26] Messages on the internet also called for people to go into the street and to join the procession to be launched by CHRF in memory of the deceased on the following day, 16 June 2019.[27]

---

23 SCMP (2019-09-04). Hong Kong leader Carrie Lam announces formal withdrawal of the extradition bill and sets up a platform to look into key causes of protest crisis. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3025641/hong-kong-leader-carrie-lam-announce-formal-withdrawal

24 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-15). Man protesting Hong Kong's extradition law dies after falling from mall in Admiralty. Retrieved from https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/15/man-protesting-hong-kongs-extradition-law-unconscious-jumping-mall-admiralty/

HK01 (2019-06-15).【逃犯條例】反修例黃衣男太古廣場危站五小時墮地　送院不治. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/341018/逃犯條例-反修例黃衣男太古廣場危站五小時墮地-送院不治

25 The Storm Media (2019-06-16). 「全面撤回送中，我們不是暴動」香港反送中示威者墜樓身亡　網友「一人一花」悼祭烈士. Retrieved from https://www.storm.mg/article/1392139

Apple Daily.tw (2019-06-22). 「他是被政權推下去的」 反送中烈士頭七 港人悼念：會完成他的理想. Retrieve from https://tw.appledaily.com/headline/daily/20190622/38371660/

26 Young Post (2019-06-20). Hong Kong extradition law: Protest art from HK streets illustrate how people feel about fugitive bill. Retrieved from https://yp.scmp.com/news/features/article/113369/hong-kong-extradition-law-protest-art-hk-streets-illustrate-how-people

27 Ibid

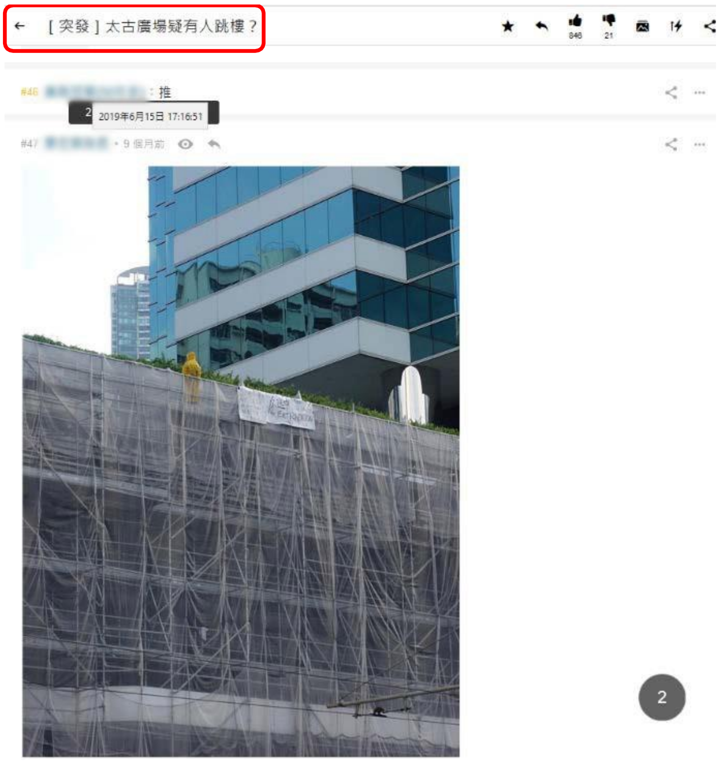




Image 4-9: Online forum discussions holding the Government responsible for protester’s death outside Pacific Place on 15 June 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



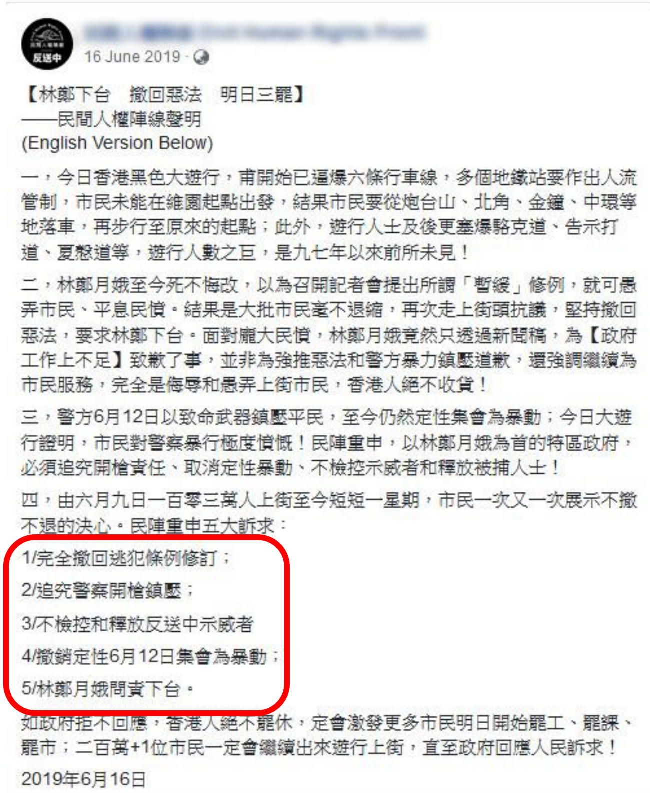
Image 4-10: Protest art commemorating the deceased male protester, who was in yellow raincoat on the day of his death
(Image Source: LIHKG)

4.28 According to CHRF's estimate, two million took part in the procession on 16 June 2019, while the Police counted 338 000 at the peak. The procession concluded peacefully at CGC. At the conclusion of the procession, CHRF commemorated the deceased protester, saying that "2 million and one" had taken part in the event.[28] The "Five Demands" first appeared for the first time in written form:[29]

- complete withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill;
- accountability for Police decision to shoot on 12 June 2019;
- release of the arrested protesters and withdrawal of all charges;
- retraction of characterisation of the protest as "riot";
- resignation of the Chief Executive.

28 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-16)【逃犯條例】民陣宣佈遊行人數 200 萬零 1 人 警方指最高峰有 33.8 萬人. Retrieved from https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1024348/即時-香港-逃犯條例-民陣宣佈遊行人數 200 萬零 1 人-警方指最高峰有 33-8 萬人

29 Facebook page of CHRF. Step down, Carrie Lam! Withdraw the extradition bill! Strike tomorrow! Statement from Civil Human Rights Front. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/CivilHumanRightsFront/posts/2306234469423931



16 June 2019

【林鄭下台　撤回惡法　明日三罷】
——民間人權陣線聲明
(English Version Below)

一，今日香港黑色大遊行，甫開始已逼爆六條行車線，多個地鐵站要作出人流管制，市民未能在維園起點出發，結果市民要從炮台山、北角、金鐘、中環等地落車，再步行至原來的起點；此外，遊行人士及後更塞爆駱克道、告示打道、夏慤道等，遊行人數之巨，是九七年以來前所未見！

二，林鄭月娥至今死不悔改，以為召開記者會提出所謂「暫緩」修例，就可愚弄市民、平息民憤。結果是大批市民毫不退縮，再次走上街頭抗議，堅持撤回惡法，要求林鄭下台。面對龐大民憤，林鄭月娥竟然只透過新聞稿，為【政府工作上不足】致歉了事，並非為強推惡法和警方暴力鎮壓道歉，還強調繼續為市民服務，完全是侮辱和愚弄上街市民，香港人絕不收貨！

三，警方6月12日以致命武器鎮壓平民，至今仍然定性集會為暴動；今日大遊行證明，市民對警察暴行極度憤慨！民陣重申，以林鄭月娥為首的特區政府，必須追究開槍責任、取消定性暴動、不檢控示威者和釋放被捕人士！

四，由六月九日一百零三萬人上街至今短短一星期，市民一次又一次展示不撤不退的決心。民陣重申五大訴求：

1/完全撤回逃犯條例修訂；

2/追究警察開槍鎮壓；

3/不檢控和釋放反送中示威者

4/撤銷定性6月12日集會為暴動；

5/林鄭月娥問責下台。

如政府拒不回應，香港人絕不罷休，定會激發更多市民明日開始罷工、罷課、罷市；二百萬+1位市民一定會繼續出來遊行上街，直至政府回應人民訴求！

2019年6月16日

Image 4-11: The Five Demands on the Facebook page of CHRF on 16 June 2019
(Image source: CHRF's Facebook)

<u>*Friday 21 June & Wednesday 26 June 2019 – Besieging of Police Headquarters*</u>

4.29 On 18 and 19 June 2019, the Chief Executive and the S for S respectively apologised to the public for deficiencies in handling the Fugitive Offenders Bill. Despite their apologies, the protests did not abate. On the nights of 21 and 26 June 2019, hundreds to thousands of protesters laid siege to PHQ after taking part in rallies in Admiralty and Central respectively on those two days. The Police did not take any dispersal action although the exterior of PHQ was defaced with slogans. CCTV cameras were disabled or smashed laser beams were shone on police officers seen from the street. However, the Police only stood guard inside PHQ, and allowed the protesters to disperse in their own time.[30]

---

[30] SCMP (2019-06-21). As it happened: How Hong Kong extradition bill protesters continued siege of police headquarters into Friday night. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015463/hong-kong-extradition-bill-protesters-occupy-road-leading

SCMP (2019-06-26). Siege of Hong Kong police headquarters ends without clashes after 6-hour drama by extradition bill protesters. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3016238/hong-kong-police-under-siege-again-protesters-surround

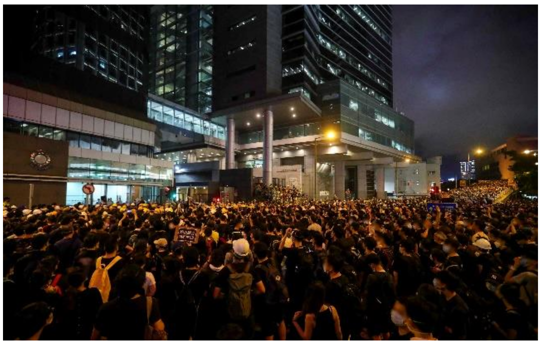




Image 4-12: Protesters laid sieges to PHQ on 21 and 26 June 2019
(Images source: SCMP)

4.30 On 29 and 30 June, two females, both in their twenties, committed suicide by jumping off from buildings. In their suicide notes, they expressed their dissatisfaction with the Fugitive Offenders Bill and encouraged other protesters in their cause.[31] Some messages memorialising their death subsequently appeared on the internet.[32]

4.31 In June 2019, the Police used tear gas and other less-lethal weapons on 12 June 2019 and arrested a total of 73. At the time, the clashes on 9 and 12 June were thought to be very violent. The storm had just begun. Those protests and clashes were mild in comparison with events in the months that followed.

31 On.cc (2019-06-29). 逃犯條例：牆身留反修例字句 教大女學生墮樓亡. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190629/bkn-20190629163435030-0629_00822_001.html

Apple Daily (2019-06-30). 【引渡惡法】29歲女子中環 ifc 墮樓亡 fb 留遺言：七一我去不了. Retrieved from https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190630/59773700?utm_campaign=hkad_article_share&utm_medium=social&utm_source=facebook&utm_content=share_link

32 LIHKG (2019-06-29). 粉嶺 21 歲女子墮樓亡. Retrieved from https://lihkg.com/thread/1265749/page/6

LIHKG (2019-06-30). 可靠消息指，今日在 IFC 墮樓的女子經搶救後不治. Retrieved from https://lihkg.com/thread/1269178/page/2

Protests in July 2019:

July 2019						
Sun	**Mon**	**Tue**	**Wed**	**Thu**	**Fri**	**Sat**
	1 Storming of the LegCo Complex	2	3	4	5	6 Clashes in Tuen Mun
7 Clashes in Tsim Sha Tsui, West Kowloon, Mong Kok	8	9	10	11	12	13 Clashes in Sheung Shui
14 Clashes in Sha Tin A finger section of an officer bitten off by a protester	15	16	17	18	19	20
21 Clashes in Western District including LOCPG Protesters attacked in Yuen Long by people dressed in white	22	23	24	25	26 First Rally at the Airport	27 Reclaim Yuen Long
28 Clashes in Western District	29	30	31			

Highlights of July 2019

- **Violent protesters vandalising LegCo on 1 July 2019 with a subsequent cost of $40 million for repairs.**
- **Violence spreading to different districts between 6 and 14 July 2019 and beginning to take root.**
- **Yuen Long Incident on 21 July 2019 and use of social media to incite and disseminate hatred for police officers.**
- **Violent protesters vandalising the exterior of the Liaison Office of the Central People's Government (LOCPG) office and clashing with the Police on 21 July 2019.**

Monday 1 July 2019 - Storming of the LegCo Complex

4.32 Similar to previous years, CHRF launched the 1 July procession from Victoria Park to CGC that afternoon. Since 29 June 2019, there had been messages on the internet calling for people to disrupt the flag-raising ceremony in the morning of 1 July 2019, block the major thoroughfares near the Hong Kong Convention and Exhibition Centre (HKCEC) and attack the LegCo Complex to press for Government withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill.



Image 4-13: A post on LIHKG appealing for disrupting the flag-raising ceremony on 1 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.33 In the small hours of 1 July 2019, protesters started gathering outside the LegCo Complex. They later occupied the roads outside LegCo Complex and near the HKCEC. In the early morning, there were sporadic clashes between some protesters and the Police in these areas. At 10:44, the Police withdrew to avoid confrontations.

4.34 Around 13:17, some protesters used metal rods and a cart loaded with objects to smash the glass panels repeatedly at Members' Entrance 2 of the LegCo Complex.



Image 4-14: Around 13:17 of 1 July 2019, some protesters started charging the LegCo Complex, including using a metal cart
(Image source: HK01)

4.35 Around 17:00, protesters moved to Public Entrance 1 and smashed the glass panels there. Around 21:00, they broke into the LegCo Complex and threw at the police officers inside objects that emitted a billowing white powdery smoke believed to be acidic and poisonous. The police officers retreated to the adjacent Central Government Office, leaving the LegCo Complex unguarded. After entering the LegCo Complex, the violent protesters remained inside for about three hours, vandalising the main chamber, computer server rooms, offices and desks designated for Members. This resulted in a cost of about $40 million for repairing. The restoration and repair of essential meeting facilities of the LegCo Complex were completed in early October 2019. However, the restoration of glass panels was still underway as at mid-March 2020.[33] The Police took dispersal action in the vicinity of the LegCo Complex around midnight, when most of the protesters had already left.

[33] Initial written reply by Secretary General, Legislative Council Secretariat to questions raised by Finance Committee Members in examining the Estimates of Expenditure 2020-21. Q4377. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr19-20/english/fc/fc/w_q/lc-e.pdf



Image 4-15: After 21:00 of 1 July 2019, violent protesters occupied the LegCo Complex and vandalised the premises
(Image source: HK01)

4.36 A detailed study of the events of 1 July 2019 is at Chapter 9.

4.37 On 4 July 2019, some posts on LIHKG called for netizens to use social media to persuade companies not to place advertisements with Television Broadcasts Limited (TVB), accusing TVB of reporting fake news or news in favour of the Government during the protests. As a result, some advertisers suspended placing advertisements with TVB.[34]

---

[34] SCMP (2019-07-10). Pocari Sweat among big brand advertisers ditching Hong Kong broadcaster TVB over claims its extradition bill protest coverage was biased. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018074/pocari-sweat-among-big-brand-advertisers-reportedly-fleeing

Hong Kong Free Press (2019-07-10). Hong Kong broadcaster TVB defends neutrality as clients suspend ads amid protester boycott campaign. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/07/10/hong-kong-broadcaster-tvb-defends-neutrality-clients-suspend-ads-amid-protester-boycott-campaign/



Image 4-16: Posts on LIHKG on 4 July 2019 regarding TVB's advertisers
(Image source: LIHKG)

<u>*Saturday 6 July to Sunday 14 July 2019 - Protests in Various Districts*</u>

4.38 The frequency and scale of protests escalated from 1 July 2019 onwards, with protests being staged in different districts. On Saturday 6 July 2019, a few thousand protesters covered by LoNO, marched in Tuen Mun with a theme "Reclaim Tuen Mun Park". This was in protest against the nuisance from the singing and dancing performances of some middle-aged women commonly known as "dama" (大媽), which attracted many older men from the neighbourhood, and the lack of action by the authorities to stop these activities. In the evening, a few hundred protesters surrounded Tuen Mun Police Station and occupied the roads outside. The protesters left only after police officers formed a cordon line outside for dispersal action.[35]

---

[35] SCMP (2019-07-06). Large crowd gathers in Hong Kong to protest against noisy middle-aged women 'dama' singers from mainland China shattering peace of Tuen Mun Park. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3017556/large-crowd-gathers-hong-kong-protest-against-noisy-middle

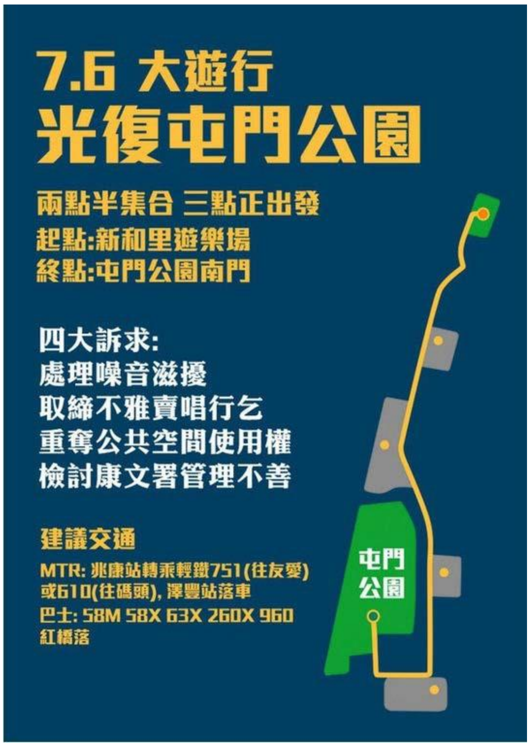


Image 4-17: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 6 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.39 On Sunday 7 July 2019, tens of thousands of protesters marched, with LoNO, from Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station, to promote their cause to Mainland visitors and to win their support.[36] One message on LIHKG wrote, "*I hope this march can tell Mainland people what we are fighting for and sow a seed against tyranny*."[37] Upon conclusion of the peaceful procession at 19:30, thousands of protesters went "shopping" in Mong Kok where clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action. The Police arrested five persons.[38]

---

36 SCMP (2019-07-07). Mass protest draws tens of thousands to streets of Kowloon in march against Hong Kong extradition bill. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3017620/mass-rally-draws-tens-thousands-streets-kowloon-protest

37 RFI (2019-07-07). China station next target for Hong Kong protesters. Retrieved from http://www.rfi.fr/en/contenu/20190707-china-station-next-target-hong-kong-protesters

38 SCMP (2019-07-08). Hong Kong police accused of provoking protesters and failing to wear ID during Mong Kok chaos after extradition bill march. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3017775/hong-kong-police-accused-provoking-protesters-and

Ming Pao (2019-07-08).【逃犯條例．九龍大遊行．短片】警驅散示威者拘 5 人譴責堵路　攝記協譴責警清場推撞記者 (07:40). Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190708/s00001/1562516181559/【逃犯條例-九龍大遊行-短片】警驅散示威者拘 5 人譴責堵路-攝記協譴責警清場推撞記者



Image 4-18: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 7 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.40 The clashes on 7 July 2019 between the protesters and the Police in Yau Ma Tei continued in the early hours of 8 July 2019. During the Police operation in dispersing protesters, the Police formed a cordon line on Nathan Road. A large crowd of reporters stood in front of the cordon line. This created an impression that the police officers might not be able to advance. Some Legislative Councillors were among the reporters and negotiated with the Police with a loudhailer. One of the Legislative Councillors was later arrested and charged with two counts of "Assaulting a Police Officer" with the loudhailer.[39]

39 SCMP (2020-01-20). Hong Kong protests: ex-lawmaker Au Nok-hin accused of damaging police officer's hearing during Yau Ma Tei stand-off. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3046886/hong-kong-protests-ex-lawmaker-au-nok-hin-accused





Image 4-19: The presence of reporters in a POE in Mong Kok on 8 July 2019
(Image source: Cable TV)

4.41 On 9 July 2019, the Chief Executive announced that the Fugitive Offenders Bill was "dead".[40] However, this did not reduce the momentum of the protests.

---

40 HKSAR Government (2019-07-09). Transcript of remarks by CE at media session before ExCo meeting. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/09/P2019070900608.htm?fontSize=1

4.42 On Saturday 13 July 2019, some protesters marched in Sheung Shui with LoNO, to "reclaim" Sheung Shui from the parallel trading activities which affected the daily lives of residents and caused overcrowding on-street. They also demanded the complete withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The organiser estimated a turnout of 30 000 while the Police counted 4 000 at the peak. Shortly after the march, clashes broke out between the protesters and some parallel tradesmen. When the Police took dispersal action, some protesters surrounded and attacked officers with umbrellas and metal poles. Some other protesters occupied roads. The crowd was eventually dispersed by night-time. At least ten police officers and 14 civilians were injured. The Police arrested four persons. The protesters were mostly young people, highly organised and well prepared to tackle police officers with weapons. [41]



Image 4-20: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 13 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.43 On Sunday 14 July 2019, the protesters launched the "Sha Tin Procession" with LoNO, when some protesters occupied the roads near East Rail Line Sha Tin Station. The organiser of the march estimated 115 000 participated while the Police counted 28 000 at the peak.

---

41 SCMP (2019-07-13). Hong Kong border town of Sheung Shui rocked by protest violence and chaos before police finally clear streets at night. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018473/sheung-shui-readies-itself-protests-hongkongers-take

SCMP (2019-07-14). Pharmacies and cosmetics shops targeted as parallel trading protest takes ugly turn in Hong Kong border town. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018504/pharmacies-and-cosmetics-shops-targeted-parallel-trading



Image 4-21: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 14 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.44 Clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action. Many protesters ran into New Town Plaza where they had further violent clashes with the pursuing police officers. Outnumbered by the violent protesters, the police officers were violently attacked by the protesters with umbrellas and other objects. The officers were kicked and punched, and hard objects were hurled at them from all directions. Scenes in the shopping mall were chaotic and particularly violent. A video footage recorded a plainclothes officer being kicked from an escalator by a protester and then assaulted by others when he fell to the ground until a journalist came to his rescue. Another police officer had a section of a finger bitten off by a protester. A total of 11 police officers were injured. According to Hospital Authority (HA), 28 persons were treated at various hospitals in relation to the POEs that day. The Police arrested 47 persons. The clashes in the New Town Plaza were far more unruly and ferocious than the previous clashes. Yet, it was only the beginning of increasing violence that followed.[42]

---

42 SCMP (2019-07-14). Hong Kong protesters in Sha Tin showered with support and supplies – even from 10 floors up. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018565/hong-kong-protesters-sha-tin-showered-support-and-supplies

SCMP (2019-07-14). Pitched battles on Hong Kong streets and inside shopping malls as police move to clear extradition bill protesters after stand-off. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018531/thousands-gather-hong-kong-park-latest-rally-against

SCMP (2019-07-15). Hong Kong police chief condemns 'rioters' after extradition bill clashes in Sha Tin leave 22 people in hospital with six in critical or serious condition. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018579/hong-kong-police-chief-condemns-thug-protesters-after

<u>Sunday 21 July 2019 - Clashes outside LOCPG and the Yuen Long Incident</u>

4.45 On 21 July 2019, CHRF launched a march with LoNO to walk from Victoria Park to Luard Road in Wan Chai. According to CHRF, 430 000 took part but the Police count was 138 000 at peak time. The protesters proclaimed their demands.



Image 4-22: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 21 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.46 Many protesters did not stop at Luard Road but continued to walk in the direction of Sheung Wan. On arriving at LOCPG, they threw eggs and black ink or paint at the building and defaced the National Emblem on the building.[43] Violent clashes broke out with the Police. The protesters substantially escalated their violence in the disturbances: blocking roads, setting objects on fire and using different weapons including sling shots to cause injury. According to the Police, the violent protesters also used petrol bombs.[44] The turmoil continued until midnight. In the operation, the Police fired nine rubber rounds, 25 react rounds and 55 rounds of tear gas.[45]

SCMP (2019-07-16). Head wounds, a severed finger, police and protesters in hospital: how a peaceful rally in Hong Kong descended into bloodshed and chaos in Sha Tin's New Town Plaza mall. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3018718/head-wounds-severed-finger-police-and-protesters

43 SCMP (2019-07-21). Central Hong Kong becomes battleground as riot police clash with protesters after third major march against extradition bill and siege of Beijing's liaison office. Retrieved fromhttps://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3019483/tens-thousands-hong-kong-kick-third-major-protest-march

44 RTHK (2019-07-25). 警方稱過去周日中上環共發射 5 發橡膠子彈 24 枚海綿彈. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1470459-20190725.htm

45 RTHK (2019-07-25). 警方稱過去周日中上環共發射 5 發橡膠子彈 24 枚海綿彈. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1470459-20190725.htm



Image 4-23: The protesters threw black paint at the National Emblem on the LOCPG façade
(Image source: Ming Pao)

4.47 As the Police attended to the disturbances in Western District, the situation in Yuen Long had been simmering since late afternoon with people dressed in white believed to be indigenous villagers gathering at Fung Yau Street North.[46] At 22:48, about 70 or so dressed in white, some carrying sticks and wooden poles, entered Yuen Long Station where they assaulted a group of about 100 people in black outfits, first in the paid area and later in the compartments of a train on the upper platform. Commuters on the train were also hurt. When the Police arrived at Yuen Long Station, some of those people dressed in white had left. The police officers, however, did not stop others in white who were then leaving. The Police also did not act in some subsequent assault incidents committed by the persons in white later at Yuen Long Station. Police failure to act or to respond promptly in the incidents gave rise to allegations of collusion between the Police and triads on the internet.[47] The inappropriate responses of two senior officers to media enquiries that night reinforced such allegations.

46 SCMP (2019-07-30). Hong Kong police 'under investigation' by corruption watchdog over failure to protect public during Yuen Long attacks. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3020635/hong-kong-police-officers-call-citys-no-2-clarify-apology

47 SCMP (2019-07-21). As it happened: Hong Kong police fire rounds of tear gas in heart of city, while violence breaks out in Yuen Long. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3019484/protesters-spill-beyond-end-point-third-major-march-against

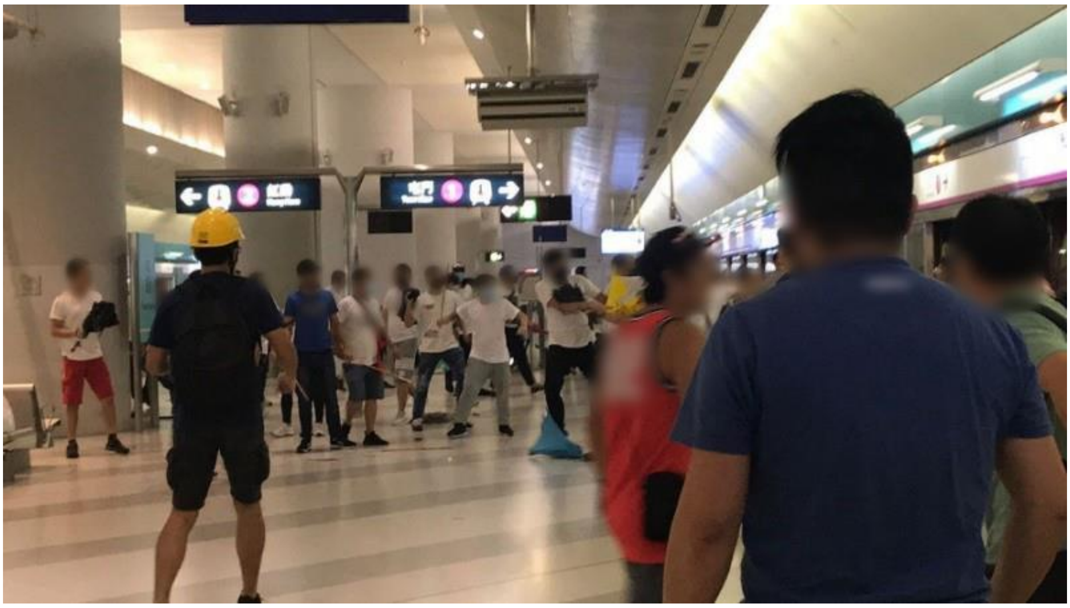


Image 4-24: Around 23:05 of 21 July 2019, people dressed in white on the platform
(Image source: HK01)

4.48 The Yuen Long Incident did not take place without cause. On the evening of 16 July 2019, some protest supporters had a confrontation with a group dressed in white at a public screening of alleged police brutality held by the protest supporters at Fung Yau Street North. Soon after, there were online messages calling for people to “reclaim” Yuen Long and to take part in a public meeting to be held in Yuen Long on 21 July 2019. In response, the opponent vowed to beat up the protest supporters if they dared to go to Yuen Long. Prior to 21 July 2019, the Police was aware of these development. The protesters used the social media to coordinate their action and disseminate accusations against the Police. Details of the Yuen Long Incident are at Chapter 10.



Translation
Deserters
Wanted
Hong Kong Police

21 July 2019 Around 23:00
After witnessing citizens under terrorist attack, two uniformed police turned around and left, leaving the citizens to death.

Image 4-25: Propaganda blaming police inaction in Yuen Long on 21 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

Friday 26 July 2019 – First Rally at Airport

4.49 The first rally at the Hong Kong International Airport (Airport) was held on 26 July 2019 with LoNO. Protesters distributed leaflets and displayed posters to inform travellers of their reasons for protest and to enlist support from the international community.[48]

Saturday 27 July 2019 - Violent Protests in Yuen Long

4.50 On Saturday 27 July 2019, despite Police refusal to issue a LoNO, about 288 000 protesters (according to the event organiser), some wearing helmets and protective gears, marched on the roads in Yuen Long on a cause dubbed "Reclaim Yuen Long", and blocked

48 SCMP (2019-07-26). Protesters occupy part of Hong Kong International Airport to rally overseas support against extradition bill. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/transport/article/3020270/protesters-occupy-part-hong-kong-international-airport

major roads in the district. When the Police turned up calling for dispersal, the protesters began attacking the Police with umbrellas, bricks, wooden shields and other objects. Violent protesters later surrounded Yuen Long Police Station, again throwing bricks and other objects, causing obstruction outside the station and the suspension of Police Report Room services.[49] On this day, the Police fired 118 rounds of tear gas and 30 rubber rounds,[50] and arrested ten persons.[51]

Sunday 28 July 2019 - Violent Protests in Western District

4.51 On 28 July 2019, there was another protest on Hong Kong Island when participants of an authorised sit-in at Chater Garden diverted to Causeway Bay and Western District in the late afternoon in defiance of the conditions set in the LoNO. Along the way, the protesters chanted "香港警察 知法犯法" (Translation: Hong Kong Police knowingly breaks the law) and "光復香港 時代革命" (Translation: Liberate Hong Kong; revolution of our times). A group of violent protesters who went to Causeway Bay blocked the road outside Sogo Department Store. Another group of about 200 violent protesters who went in the direction of LOCPG had violent clashes in Sheung Wan with police officers in full riot gear and full-length shields, batons and other less-lethal weapons. The violent protesters also wore helmets, gas masks, and were equipped with self-made shields. They hurled bricks and other hard objects at the police officers. They also charged a cart carrying objects on fire at the Police cordon line.[52] The Police responded with 408 rounds of tear gas, 95 rubber rounds, two super sock rounds and 50 react rounds. The Police arrested 58 persons. What happened on 27 and 28 July was practically a replay of the incident took place on 21 July 2019, but with the violence considerably escalated.

[49] SCMP (2019-07-27). As it happened: bloody clashes and tear gas fired as Hong Kong protesters descend on Yuen Long. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3020340/knife-attack-yuen-long-tensions-mount-ahead-hong-kong

[50] RTHK VNEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3

[51] https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749

[52] SCMP (2019-07-28). As it happened: How a seemingly directionless Hong Kong march stretched for 6km and still ended in clashes. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3020383/protesters-spill-out-chater-garden-another-march-against



Image 4-26: Propaganda calling for participation of protests on 28 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.52 The frequency, the scale and the level of violence in the protests in July 2019 were markedly escalated in comparison with those in June 2019. In July 2019, 52 public meetings/processions were approved by the Police with six rejected. For June 2019, the figures were 20 approved with one rejected. In July 2019, the Police fired a total of 608 rounds of tear gas, 134 rubber rounds, three super sock rounds and 114 react rounds, and arrested 224.

Protests in August 2019:

August 2019						
Sun	**Mon**	**Tue**	**Wed**	**Thu**	**Fri**	**Sat**
				1	2	3 Cross Harbour Tunnel barricaded
4 Launch of the real-time crowdsourced map tracking Police movements Cross Harbour Tunnel barricaded	5 Territory wide violent protests Cross Harbour Tunnel barricaded	6	7	8	9	10 Territory wide violent protests Cross Harbour Tunnel barricaded
11 Territory wide violent protests Tear Gas at Kwai Fong Pepper ball at Tai Koo Arrested persons sent to SULHC	12 Protest at the Airport	13 Protest at the Airport	14	15	16	17
18	19 Found a fake press reporter card	20	21 Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident	22	23	24 Targeted MTR after 24 August
25 Violent protest warning shot fired First use of SCMV	26	27	28	29	30	31 Territory wide violent protests Prince Edward Station Incident Found 12 fake press reporters cards

Highlights of August 2019

- **Violent protesters launched city-wide protests (5, 10, 11 and 31 August 2019) and escalated their violent acts. Police stations were besieged.**
- **Violent protesters began using "Be Water" and urban guerrilla tactics, and an App tracking police movements appeared on the internet.**
- **Violent protesters targeted major transport infrastructures: Cross Harbour Tunnel (3, 4, 5, and 10 August 2019), Airport (12 and 13 August 2019) and MTR stations (after 24 August 2019).**
- **"An Eye for an Eye" and Yuen Long Incident were used in social media to call for participation in protests and escalation of violence.**

- **The escalated violence by protesters led to the Police introducing Specialised Crowd Management Vehicles (SCMVs) on 25 August 2019 and firing a warning shot on the same night.**
- **The Prince Edward Station Incident on 31 August 2019 was taken as a reason to further escalate protests and violence. That night, two warning shots were fired by two plainclothes police officers while being attacked by violent protesters.**

4.53 Up till the end of July 2019, it became evident that violent clashes invariably followed peaceful and lawful public meetings or processions. The violent protesters would digress from lawful events to spark off disturbances elsewhere. From August onwards, as violent protesters resorted to urban guerrilla tactics, using the MTR lines to launch territory-wide disturbances without relying on any approved public meeting or procession. They also adopted "Be Water" tactics to evade arrest. Beginning in August 2019, the frequency, the scale and the level of violence in the protests intensified exponentially.

Thursday 1 to Sunday 4 August 2019 - Attacks on Police Stations
Saturday 3 August 2019 - Violent Protests in Wong Tai Sin

4.54 Following the siege of Yuen Long Police Station on 27 July 2019, siege and attacks of police stations, mostly near MTR stations, became commonplace. For three consecutive days on 1, 2 and 3 August 2019, protesters besieged Ma On Shan Police Station. On 1 August 2019, protesters also targeted Sha Tin Police Station.[53] On 3 August 2019, a number of protesters deviated from the designated route of an approved march in Tai Kok Tsui and went to Mong Kok and Tsim Sha Tsui where the protesters clashed with the Police. After the Police dispersal action, some of the protesters fled to Wong Tai Sin. Clashes broke out there after the Police arrested some protesters. Some local residents joined the violent protesters to hurl objects and umbrellas, and discharged a fire extinguisher at police officers.[54] They then besieged Wong Tai Sin Police Station and the Disciplined Services Quarters next to it, attacking both with numerous objects. Police officers fired multiple rounds of tear gas for dispersal.

4.55 That night, Mong Kok Police Station and Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station were also under siege with violent protesters throwing bricks and hard objects. Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station was in particular their target. Violent protesters set fire at various locations in its vicinity, damaged several vehicles inside the station with bamboo sticks, bricks and others hard objects hurled into the building. On 3 August 2019, the Police fired 107 rounds of tear gas and arrested 24 persons.

4.56 On the night of 4 August 2019, hundreds of violent protesters staged another stand-off outside Wong Tai Sin Police Station, occasionally attacking with bricks and miscellaneous

---

53 RTHK (2019-08-02). 過百人到沙田警署聲援疑被警方帶走人士　有人擲雜物. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1471993-20190802.htm

54 Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-03). 【反修例】示威者發起包圍黃大仙警署　沿九龍城太子道東前進. Retrieved from https://topick.hket.com/article/2418613/【反修例】示威者發起包圍黃大仙警署沿九龍城太子道東前進

objects.[55] Police officers responded with multiple rounds of tear gas, rubber rounds and react rounds in attempts at dispersal. That night, the Police fired 109 rounds of tear gas, 29 rubber rounds and nine react rounds. 57 persons were arrested. In the two weeks leading to Sunday 11 August 2019, 18 police stations were attacked by protesters.[56]

Toll Booths of Cross Harbour Tunnel Barricaded

4.57 The Cross Harbour Tunnel at Hung Hom was also a target. In the late afternoon of 3 August 2019, some violent protesters barricaded the toll booths at the entrance in Hung Hom, blocking the traffic into and out of the tunnel. On 3, 4, 5 and 10 August 2019,[57] protesters again placed various objects at the toll booths, paralysing the tunnel traffic.

Monday 5 August - Territory-wide Violent Protests

4.58 On 4 August 2019, there was a post at 21:23 on LIHKG introducing a real-time crowdsourced map – HKmap.live.[58] The map shows the whereabouts of police officers near the scenes of attack.[59] The post also encouraged the protesters to "Be Water" and use this map to plan their strategy. On Monday 5 August 2019, the protesters extended the scope and the scale of their action. The social media was awash with calls to launch a city-wide strike and uncooperative campaign on that day.[60] Many messages were posted on social media urging people to go on strike on 5 August 2019.

---

55 Now TV (2019-08-04). 黃大仙警署及紀律部隊宿舍爆警民衝突　警施放催淚彈驅散. Retrieved from https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357846

56 Information provided by HKPF.

57 HK01 (2019-08-03). 【旺角遊行】示威者快閃紅隧　步行隧道屬違法　最高可判監 6 個月. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/359803/旺角遊行-示威者快閃紅隧-步行隧道屬違法-最高可判監 6 個月

Now TV (2019-08-04). 示威者銅鑼灣遊行至灣仔　堵塞紅隧港島出入口. Retrieved from https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357936

Oriental Daily (2019-08-05). 示威反轉多區再堵紅隧. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190805/00174_001.html

Bastille Post (2019-08-10). 示威者指揮車輛免費過海 紅隧職員：會被扣薪金. Retrieved from https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4883285-【堵塞紅隧】示威者指揮車輛通過收費亭-紅隧職員

58 https://lihkg.com/thread/1406448/page/1

59 HKmap.live is a web mapping service which crowdsources and tracks the location of the Police in Hong Kong. The service was launched during the 2019 protests and gathers reports on Police patrols and tear gas deployment via Telegram.

60 Ming Pao (2019-08-06). 八五罷工 多區集會 示威變遊擊. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/ins/圖輯/photo3/album/s00014/1565084593516/八五罷工-多區集會-示威變遊擊

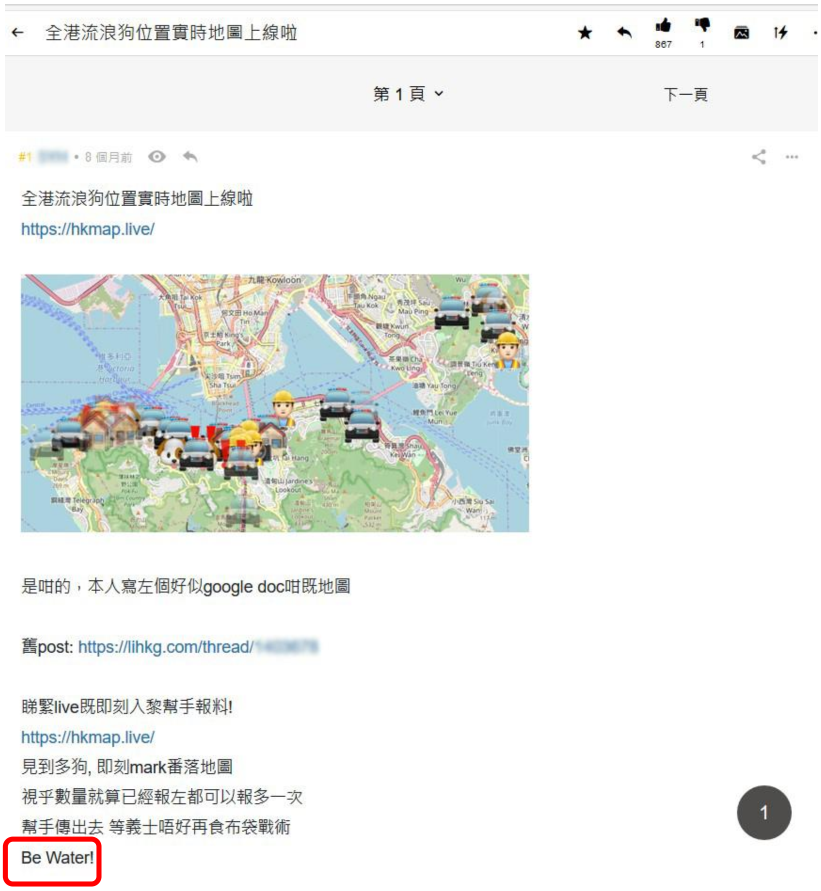


Image 4-27: A post on LIHKG introducing a mobile app – hkmap.live on 4 August 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)



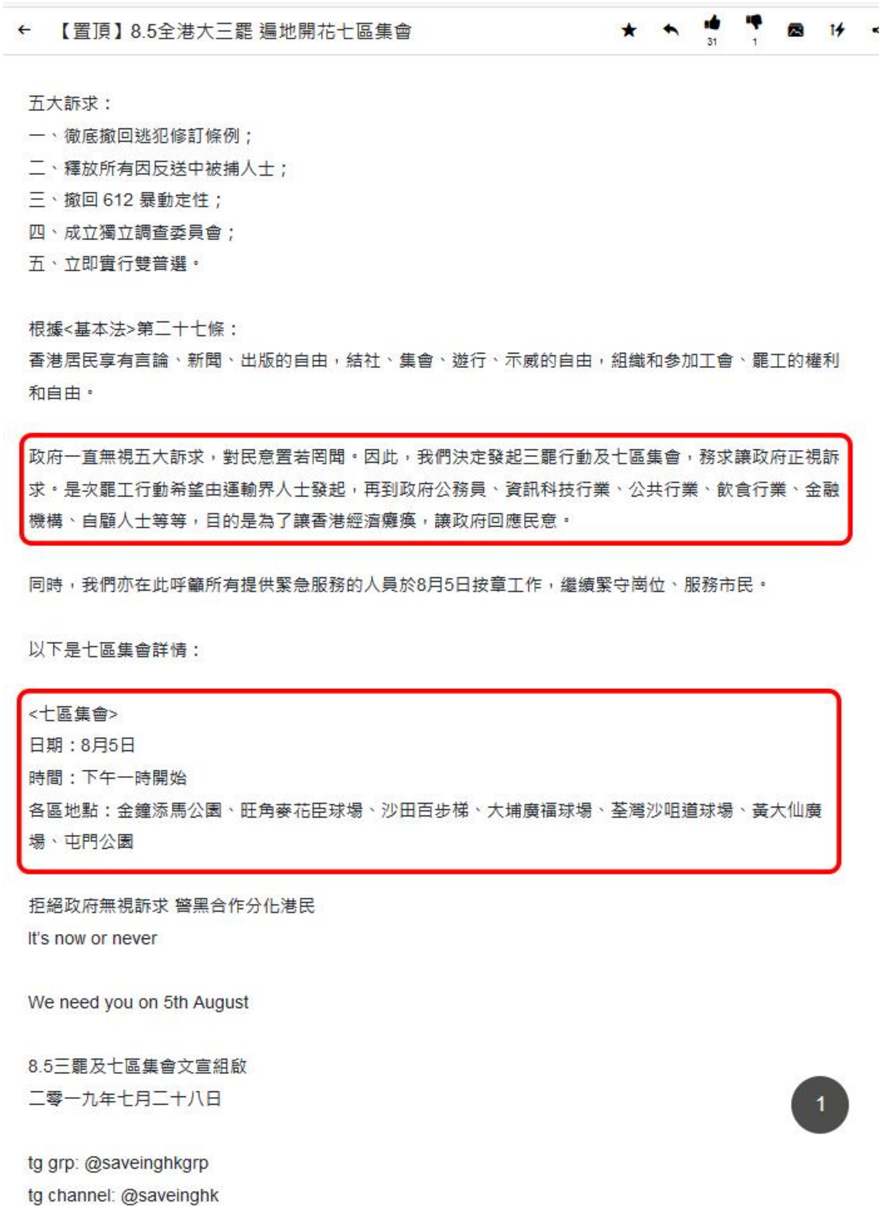
Image 4-28: Posters calling for all citizens to go on General Strike on 5 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.59 An open letter was posted in the LIHKG link for the same purpose.[61]

---

61 Text of the open letter： https://lihkg.com/thread/1379724/page/1

"6月9日至今，全港氣氛凝重而壓抑，一場又一場的聯署、遊行、集會，非但沒令政府正視當前問題，7月21日發生的元朗恐襲事件更顯示政府無力保護市民。民間提出的五大訴求，政府置若罔聞，但幾十名年輕人及其他示威人士卻已犧牲了他們的大好前途，他們被拘捕被起訴，為的就是我們愛的香港，如今正正就是和理非回報他們的大好機會。"



【置頂】8.5全港大三罷 遍地開花七區集會

五大訴求：
一、徹底撤回逃犯修訂條例；
二、釋放所有因反送中被捕人士；
三、撤回 612 暴動定性；
四、成立獨立調查委員會；
五、立即實行雙普選。

根據<基本法>第二十七條：
香港居民享有言論、新聞、出版的自由，結社、集會、遊行、示威的自由，組織和參加工會、罷工的權利和自由。

政府一直無視五大訴求，對民意置若罔聞。因此，我們決定發起三罷行動及七區集會，務求讓政府正視訴求。是次罷工行動希望由運輸界人士發起，再到政府公務員、資訊科技行業、公共行業、飲食行業、金融機構、自顧人士等等，目的是為了讓香港經濟癱瘓，讓政府回應民意。

同時，我們亦在此呼籲所有提供緊急服務的人員於8月5日按章工作，繼續緊守崗位、服務市民。

以下是七區集會詳情：

<七區集會>
日期：8月5日
時間：下午一時開始
各區地點：金鐘添馬公園、旺角麥花臣球場、沙田百步梯、大埔廣福球場、荃灣沙咀道球場、黃大仙廣場、屯門公園

拒絕政府無視訴求 警黑合作分化港民
It's now or never

We need you on 5th August

8.5三罷及七區集會文宣組啟
二零一九年七月二十八日

tg grp: @saveinghkgrp
tg channel: @saveinghk

Image 4-29: A post calling for participating General Strike on 5 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.60 On 5 August 2019, protesters resorted to urban guerrilla tactics in multiple districts in Hong Kong Island, Kowloon and the New Territories, blocking roads at many busy thoroughfares: suddenly cropping up and barricading the roads before vanishing very quickly. The General Strikes brought chaos to the transport network of Hong Kong, including the air transport. Protesters blocked the MTR train doors using flash-mob-style tactics. Eight MTR lines were affected and more than 200 flights were cancelled.[62]

---

62 Ming Pao (2019-08-06). 快閃堵三隧 15 幹道受阻. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%e8%a6%81%e8%81%9e/article/20190806/s00001/1565030065902/快閃堵三隧-15幹道受阻

4.61 Violent protesters also moved on to a number of police stations including Kwai Chung Police Station, Sha Tin Police Station, Sham Shui Po Police Station and Tin Shui Wai Police Station, hurling hard objects, petrol bombs and setting fire outside the stations. That evening, some protesters had fights in North Point and Tsuen Wan with people dressed in white and holding wooden poles who, according to some media, were members of the Fujianese community.[63] On this day, the Police discharged about a thousand rounds of tear gas, 170 rubber rounds and 11 super sock rounds in 14 districts – a record high up to 11 August 2019. The Police also arrested 165 persons.

Tuesday 6 August to Saturday 10 August 2019 - Violent Protests

4.62 On the night of 6 August 2019, a few hundred protesters assembled outside Sham Shui Po Police Station, chanting "triad cops" and "triad society". Some again shone laser beams, hurled bricks and glass bottles at the station.[64]

4.63 On 7 August 2019, hundreds of protesters gathered at Hong Kong Space Museum and shone their laser pointers on the egg-shaped dome of the museum in protest against the arrest of the Student Union President of Hong Kong Baptist University (HKBU) for possession of offensive weapons (POOW), i.e. "laser gun", the day before.[65]

4.64 On 10 August 2019, there were protests in Tai Po, Tai Wai, Sha Tin, Kwun Tong, Wong Tai Sin, Tsuen Wan, Tsim Sha Tsui, and other districts.[66] Protesters set up barricades with railings and signs torn off the road, blocked a number of thoroughfares including the Kowloon entrances of the Cross Harbour Tunnel. Clashes occurred in at least seven districts with police officers firing tear gas in Tai Wai and Tsim Sha Tsui while some violent protesters threw petrol bombs and objects such as stones at police officers. Some protesters laid siege to Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station, setting fire outside it, shinning laser pointers, and blocking the station with miscellaneous objects. To disperse the violent protesters, the Police fired 56 rounds of tear gas and nine rubber rounds. 13 persons were arrested.

---

63 The Standard (2019-08-06) Attacks in North Point, Tsuen Wan. Retrieved from https://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news/section/11/210378/Attacks-in-North-Point,-Tsuen-Wan

64 SCMP (2019-08-06). Protesters shine light on arrest of Hong Kong student with new kind of laser rally. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3021875/hong-kong-protesters-shine-light-arrest-baptist

65 Sing Tao Daily News (2019-08-08). 千人響應號召 太空館外用雷射筆觀星. Retrieved from https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2044955/日報-港聞-千人響應號召-太空館外用雷射筆觀星

66 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例】示威者多區快閃堵路 稱要消耗警力免被捕 (01:23). Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190811/s00001/1565457389190/【逃犯條例】示威者多區快閃堵路-稱要消耗警力免被捕

Sunday 11 August 2019 - Violent Protests

4.65 For 11 August 2019, the protesters launched three large-scale public procession and meetings, at Victoria Park, Maple Street Playground in Sham Shui Po and the Airport respectively. The Airport rally had not notified to the Police fo LoNO. For safety reasons, the Police issued a LoNO only for the public meeting at Victoria Park, objecting the other public meetings and processions in Sham Shui Po and Hong Kong Island East. Beginning in August 2019, messages had appeared on the internet inciting people to adopt urban guerrilla tactics for extensive damage and blockage of thoroughfares. The real-time crowdsourced map tracking the locations of the Police was enhanced on 10 August 2019.

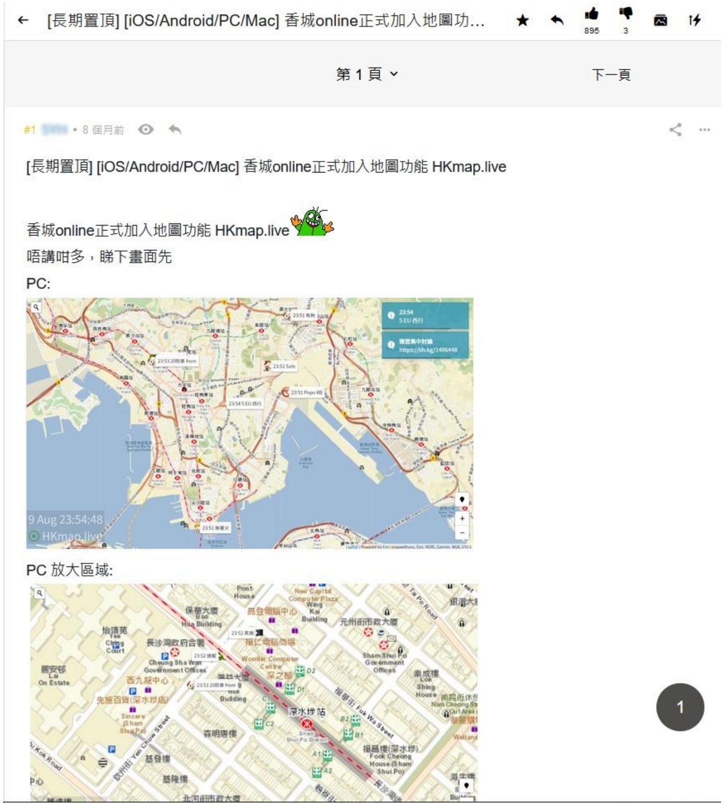


Image 4-30: The function of the real-time map was enhanced on 10 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.66 Calls for escalation of protest action and violence continued to circulate on the internet in August 2019.



Image 4-31: Social media message urging people to protest on 11 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.67 The Police anticipated that protesters would escalate action to paralyse city traffic and attack police officers with highly offensive weapons and great violence. Hence, the Police deployed some 3 850 officers for contingencies across various districts.

4.68 On 11 August 2019, protests took place in multiple locations. Protesters branched out from the originally scheduled public procession and public meetings to stage disturbances in various districts. On the Hong Kong Island side, some protesters sprayed graffiti on the base of the Golden Bauhinia sculpture, while others blocked the roads outside PHQ and set different objects on fire. From 17:00 till after midnight, protesters adopted urban guerrilla tactics, using the MTR to mobilise themselves swiftly to occupy roads at different locations in the vicinity and then moving on to other spots. On Hong Kong Island, they occupied roads in North Point, Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, Quarry Bay, Tai Koo Shing and Sai Wan Ho. Clashes broke out when the Police took action for dispersal. At Tai Koo Station, there was an incident of shooting pepper balls by the Police at close range.

4.69 In Kowloon, from 16:00 to after midnight, like those on Hong Kong Island, groups of protesters reportedly travelled by MTR to different districts to block roads including Tsim Sha Tsui, Mei Foo, Kowloon Tong, Kwai Fong, and Sha Tin. At Kwai Fong Station, there was an

incident of firing of tear gas inside the Station. They staged protests outside Cheung Sha Wan Police Station, Sham Shui Po Police Station, Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station, Kwai Chung Police Station and Sha Tin Police Station. Among these, Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station was under the most serious attack from bricks, hard objects and petrol bombs. Cross Harbour Tunnel was also blocked by protesters that day. The events on 11 August leading to the Police use of force in Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations are looked at in Chapter 11.

4.70 Clashes broke out between violent protesters and the Police in various districts and outside many police stations. The violent protesters hurled petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at the police officers who in response used tear gas and other less-lethal weapons. On that single day, the Police fired 361 rounds of tear gas, 27 rubber rounds, and 14 super sock rounds and arrested 101 persons. Among the arrested persons, 53 were sent to San Uk Ling Holding Centre (SULHC) directly for post-arrest processing. The use of SULHC by the Police as a temporary holding area is looked at in Chapter 14.

4.71 An incident on 11 August 2019 which achieved the most prominence in media reports and on the internet was the incident in which a female person sustained an injury to her eye outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station at night allegedly caused by the Police. Pictorial materials alleging "police brutality", "eye for eye" after 11 August 2019 were posted on the social media.



Image 4-32: Social media message after 11 August 2019

(Image source: Facebook)

4.72 The female sustaining eye injury, however, refused to cooperate with the Police to investigate what had caused the injury and refused to let the Police see her medical report. As a result, the Police obtained the document by search warrant, which she then challenged by applying for Judicial Review. Following the court ruling in favour of the Police on 22 January 2020, the female filed an appeal. As at 29 February 2020, a hearing date has yet to be fixed. Nonetheless, this claim that she had been shot in the eye by the Police had been the cause for further protests.

Monday 12 August to Friday 30 August 2019 – Protests

4.73 On 12 August 2019, in response to the social media allegations of "police brutality", thousands of protesters gathered at the Airport with signs proclaiming "Evil Police - An Eye for An Eye" accusing the Police of injuring the female's eye.[67]

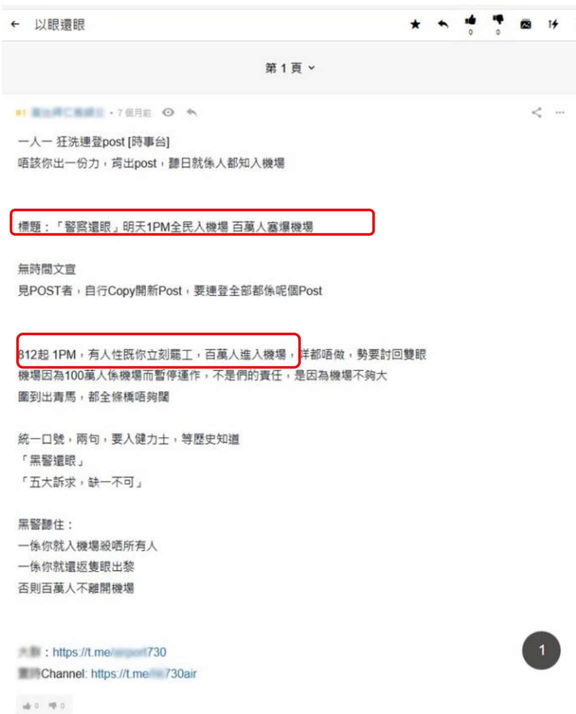


Image 4-33: Social media message on protests at Airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

67 HK01 (2019-08-12). 機管局與航空公司將視情況於明早 6 時重編航班. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362757/機場集會-直擊-機管局與航空公司將視情況於明早 6 時重編航班



(Image source: Facebook)



(Image source: Twitter)



(Image source: Twitter)



(Image source: Twitter)

Image 4-34: Posts and posters calling for protest at the Airport on 12 August 2019

4.74 Protesters swamped the Departure Hall, blocking access to the departure gates, resulting in cancellation of all remaining departing and arriving flights after 16:00 that day.

4.75 On the same day, about a hundred people gathered in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against police operations at the station on 11 August. They surrounded station staff and the control room demanding explanations for MTRC's handling of the incident during and after the event.



Image 4-35: Sit-in at the Airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.76 On 13 August 2019, some protesters again gathered at the Airport and blocked the passageways to the restricted area.[68] The Airport Authority suspended all check-in service for departure flights after 16:30. Disputes arose between some protesters and passengers in the Departure Hall. In the evening, some protesters tied up a male passenger whom they believed to be an undercover police officer. Around 23:00, the Police accompanied a number of ambulance officers to go inside the Airport to take the injured passenger to hospital. After the ambulance officers had rescued him, many protesters attacked the police officers guarding at the Airport entrance. The officers defended themselves with OC Foam and batons. One officer was fiercely assaulted and his baton was snatched. He pulled out his revolver to ward off the protesters attacking him.[69] Shortly after, a second man, later revealed to be a Global Times reporter, was beaten and tied up by the protesters. On the following day, the Airport Authority said it had been granted an interim injunction order from the High Court on 13 August 2019 for restraining protesters from attending or participating in any protests or public events in the Airport.[70]

---

68 Airport Authority Website (2019-08-13). Check-in Service for Departure Flights Suspended due to Public Assembly at HKIA , Retrieved from https://www.hongkongairport.com/en/media-centre/press-release/2019/pr_1348

69 RTHK (2019-08-13). Police storm airport as protesters hold 'suspects'. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1474483-20190813.htm

70 RTHK (2019-08-14). Airport Authority confirms injunction order. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1474538-20190814.htm



Image 4-36: A male was tied up by protesters at the Airport on the night of 13 August 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-37: A police officer pulled out his revolver to ward off the protesters attacking him on 13 August 2019
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

HK01 (2019-08-14). Continuation of the interim injunction order, as varied, was granted to Airport Authority on 23 August until trial or further order of the court. 與示威者爆衝突 警擎左輪佩槍解圍 首現致命武器. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/363494/機場集會-與示威者爆衝突-警擎左輪佩槍解圍-首現致命武器

4.77 On 14 August 2019, protesters gathered outside police stations in Sham Shui Po, Tai Po and Tin Shui Wai to mark the Ghost Festival, burning joss paper (an offering to the dead) and shone laser pointers at these police stations. The protest in Sham Shui Po led to firing of tear gas for dispersal.

4.78 On 17 August 2019, a group of protesters took to the street to "Reclaim Hung Hom and To Kwa Wan", where they deviated from the approved route and occupied roads along their way from Hung Hom to Mong Kok. Protesters blocked Nathan Road and laid siege to Mong Kok Police Station. Some protesters on a footbridge near Mong Kok Road hurled miscellaneous objects including a litterbin at police officers and a police vehicle underneath.

4.79 On Sunday 18 August 2019, CHRF organised a procession from Victoria Park. According to CHRF, 1.7 million took part but the Police had a count of 128 000 at peak time.

4.80 On 19 August 2019, the Hong Kong Journalists Association found a press card purportedly issued by a Macau media institution. Verification with the institution confirmed that it did not issue such press card to that person. The holder of the card was suspected to be a fake reporter.

4.81 On 20 August 2019, about a hundred people again gathered in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against the Police operation at the station on 11 August 2019. Similar to the event on 12 August 2019, they surrounded station staff and the control room to demand explanations for MTRC's handling of the incident during and after the event.[71]

4.82 On 21 August 2019, about a thousand protesters assembled at Yuen Long Station in commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident on 21 July 2019.[72] Some violent protesters set up barriers on the roads outside the station. When police officers took action to clear the barriers, these protesters retreated into Yuen Long Station. The Police formed a cordon line at a distance from the station, while protesters barricaded station entrances with objects including metal fences and rubbish bins and let down the rollers shutter to bar entrance. Inside Yuen Long Station, some of the protesters discharged foam from fire extinguishers, while others used a firehose and liquid soap to wet the floor to obstruct the Police's entry to the station. They sprayed paint on the walls and on CCTV cameras inside the station. They removed the stands and bins and damaged amenities including an escalator, before they took

71 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-08-21). 逾百市民太古站內聚集 促港鐵交代警方站內執法情況. Retrieved from https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2226091/逾百市民太古站內聚集+促港鐵交代警方站內執法情況

72 Ming Pao (2019-08-21). 防暴警元朗站外佈防 西鐵安排特別車載乘客離開元朗站. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190821/s00001/1566388054020/【元朗襲擊-多圖-短片】防暴警元朗站外佈防-西鐵安排特別車載乘客離開元朗站

special trains arranged by MTRC to leave Yuen Long Station while the Police were on guard outside.

4.83 On 23 August 2019, the MTRC announced that "*If fights, vandalism or other acts of violence occur, and under high risks or emergency situations, train service to and from the concerned stations may be stopped immediately, and /or the station may be closed, with little or no prior notice. The Police may need to enter stations to take suitable law enforcement action when necessary.*"[73] At around 22:00 on that day, MTRC announced that they had obtained an interim injunction order[74] to restrain people from obstructing or interfering with the operation of the railway, damaging any property at any station or using any threatening language or behaving in a riotous or disorderly manner at any station.[75] On the following day, protesters dubbed MTRC the "Communist Party's railway" (黨鐵), accusing it of taking sides to help suppress protesters travelling on MTR on protest days. From then on, almost every protest saw violent protesters damaging facilities inside MTR stations and setting the entrances on fire.

4.84 On Saturday 24 August and Sunday 25 August 2019, public meetings and processions with LoNO were held in Kwun Tong District and Kwai Tsing District respectively.

73 MTRC (2019-08-23). Condemnation of Vandalism at MTR Stations. Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PR-19-049-E.pdf

74 Stand News (2019-08-23). 葵芳站今晚九時關閉 市民圍堵 港鐵獲禁制令. Retrieved from https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/葵芳站今晚九時關閉-港鐵-針對有人損車站罵員工-考慮申禁制令/

MTRC. Interim injunction order to restrain unlawful and wilful acts on the railway. Retrieved from http://www.mtr.com.hk/en/customer/main/interim-injunction-order.html

75 Continuation of the interim injunction order, as varied, was granted to MTRC on 30 August until trial or further order of the court.





Image 4-38: Propagandas promoting the Kowloon East Rally on 24 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.85 On 24 August 2019, large numbers of protesters walked in Kowloon Bay area to protest against the installation of smart lampposts believed to be used for covert surveillance[76]. A post on LIHKG protested against the breach of privacy.[77]

4.86 Some protesters with an electric saw fell a smart lamppost as others proceeded to Ngau Tau Kok Police Station, outside which they clashed with some police officers.

---

76 The HKSAR Government. "Multi-functional Smart Lampposts" Pilot Scheme. Retrieved from https://www.ogcio.gov.hk/en/our_work/strategies/initiatives/smart_lampposts/

77 https://t.me/s/kt824info
https://lihkg.com/thread/1495378/page/1

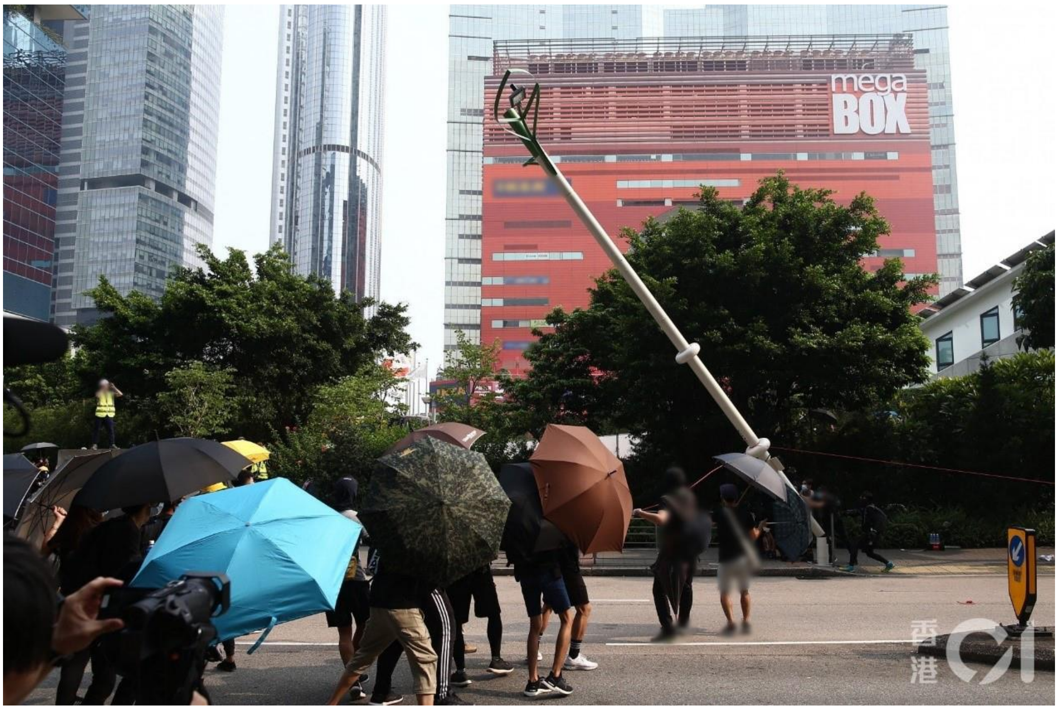


Image 4-39: Protesters tore down the smart lamppost at Kowloon Bay on 24 August 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.87 On 25 August 2019, a large crowd of protesters took part in a march from Kwai Chung to Tsuen Wan[78], with some violent protesters setting up barricades with water-filled barriers and bamboo rods to block roads in Tsuen Wan.

78 Epoch Times (2019-08-25). 荃葵青遊行 港人冒雨上街頭. Retrieved from https://hk.epochtimes.com/news/2019-08-25/87025041





Image 4-40: Propagandas promoting the Tseun Wan-Kwai Chung-Tsing Yi Rally on 25 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.88 Some protesters threw petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at police officers who responded with tear gas to disperse them. For the first time, the Police used the SCMV, but while it could temporarily disperse the crowd, the violent protests would continue. At nightfall, some violent protesters attacked shops and a mahjong house in Yi Pei Square, Tsuen Wan. Some attacked police officers with long metal poles and various self-made weapons. The police officers were in a precarious position as they were outnumbered by violent protesters who were relentless in their attack on the officers. To protect themselves, several police officers drew their revolvers and one of them fired a warning shot into the air, enabling himself and his colleagues to escape from the scene. That night, persistent violent protests spread to different locations including Kwun Tong, Sham Shui Po, Tsim Sha Tsui and WongTai Sin. On 25 August 2019, in addition to one warning shot fired in Tsuen Wan, the Police used 145 rounds of tear gas, 50 rubber rounds, six super sock rounds and 13 react rounds and arrested 57 persons.

4.89 Starting from 25 August 2019, hundreds of protesters surrounded Shum Shui Po Police Station for five consecutive days.

Violent protests on 31 August 2019

4.90 On 31 August 2014, the Standing Committee of the National People's Congress made a decision concerning the election of the Chief Executive and LegCo of the HKSAR.[79] The OCM in 2014 set off after this decision.

4.91 In commemoration of the OCM in 2014 against this decision, CHRF organised an assembly to be held at Chater Garden on the afternoon of 31 August 2019 and, after the assembly, a march to LOCPG. For public safety reasons, the Police refused the applications. Nonetheless, the Police noticed from the internet that the protesters would proceed despite the Police objection and there were suggestions of attack on police officers and damage to different government premises with a high level of violence. According to a news article[80], democratic LegCo Members asked citizens to 'Be Water' to avoid being arrested.

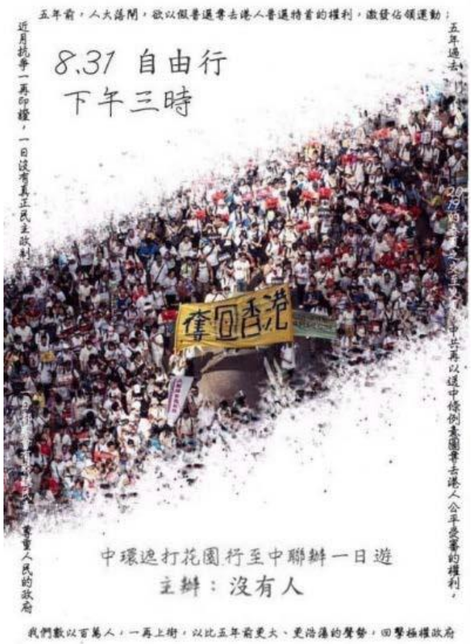


Image 4-41: Propaganda call for participation in protest on 31 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

---

79 Hong Kong Legal Information Institute. Decision of the Standing Committee of the National People's Congress on Issues Relating to the Selection of the Chief Executive of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region by Universal Suffrage and on the Method for Forming the Legislative Council of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region in the Year 2016. Retrieved from https://www.hklii.org/eng/hk/legis/instrument/A212/decision.html

80 Citizen News (2019-08-13). 「網民 831 自由行、祈禱遊行　警：按環境執法　泛民：Be Water」, Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/23223/ 831-泛民-反對通知書-23228/網民 831 自由行、祈禱遊行-警：按環境執法-泛民：be-water

4.92 On 31 August 2019, the Police deployed officers to defend CGC and to respond to contingencies at multiple locations. They put up water-filled barriers around CGC and closed the road network outside CGC. SCMVs were prepared for deployment and a number of plainclothes officers were tasked for arrest action against violent protesters.

4.93 Violent protests surfaced in multiple locations on 31 August 2019. In the early afternoon, they occupied roads at different locations, Arsenal Street and Lockhart Road in Wan Chai, Hennessy Road in Wan Chai and Causeway Bay and Connaught Road in Admiralty and Central. Traffic cones, rubbish bins, mills barriers, dismantled railings and other large objects were used. At CGC, some violent protesters threw bricks and petrol bombs at the police officers and set off fires at the water-filled barriers outside CGC.[81] The Police fired tear gas for crowd dispersal and deployed an SCMV to discharge water with blue dye from behind the water-filled barriers. The clashes in Admiralty were intense and violent. Such protests subsequently spread towards Causeway Bay and Tin Hau on Hong Kong Island and to Tsim Sha Tsui and Mong Kok in Kowloon. In the late evening, violent protesters set fire to objects they had heaped on Hennessy Road outside SOGO Department Store.[82] Around 21:00, dozens of protesters confronted several plainclothes officers at Victoria Park and assaulted them with iron rods and umbrellas, even attempting to snatch their revolvers. As a result, two plainclothes officers fired two warning shots to stop the violent protesters.[83] Eight people were arrested in that incident.

81 RTHK (2019-08-31). 示威者多次投擲汽油彈　警方水馬陣內帳篷一度著火. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1477996-20190831.htm

82 HK01 (2019-08-31). 【8.31 遊行・全日總覽】警方：港經歷浩劫　太子站行動屬適當武力. Retrieved from http://www.hk01.com/政情/369452/8-31 遊行-全日總覽-警方-港經歷浩劫-太子站行動屬適當武力

83 Ming Pao Daily News (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例．831 銅鑼灣．短片】消息：警維園開兩槍實彈維園地面遺彈殼. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190831/special/1567232542076



Image 4-42: Protesters threw petrol bombs and set off fires at the water-filled barriers outside CGC on 31 August 2019
(Image source: RTHK)



Image 4-43: The Police deployed an SCMV to discharge water with blue dye on 31 August 2019
(Image source: RTHK)

4.94 In Kowloon, the situation in Tsim Sha Tsui deteriorated from 21:00 onwards. Some violent protesters caused obstruction at Canton Road, set fire at different spots along Nathan Road and threw petrol bombs at the Police cordon line near Humphreys Road.[84] The Police responded with rounds of tear gas in attempts to drive the protesters off Nathan Road. Some

---

84 Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例】速龍小隊廣東道推進 示威者擲燃燒彈. Retrieved from http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1081064/即時-香港-逃犯條例-速龍小隊廣東道推進-示威者擲燃燒彈

protesters fled to Yau Ma Tei and Mong Kok, continuing to cause obstruction along Nathan Road. Some of them entered Mong Kok Station to damage the facilities inside with iron bars and hammers. By the time the Police arrived, some of them had already left. Some of them went to Prince Edward Station where the Incident on 31 August 2019 subsequently took place.

4.95 That evening, police officers entered Prince Edward Station and arrested 52 persons. They closed the exits to prevent violent protesters from entering or leaving the MTR station in order to take law enforcement action. They arranged for a special train to take 45 of the arrested persons to Lai Chi Kok to be further taken to Kwai Chung Police Station and to hospitals for those who were injured. After the incidents, messages appeared on the internet accusing the Police of killing several persons inside the MTR station. Despite the absence of evidence to support this claim, many would still place flowers at one of the exits of Prince Edward Station on the last day of each month in memory of those alleged deceased. Up till Feb 2020, protesters used the incident as an excuse to launch protests.

4.96 During a search in a shop at Sai Ying Pun on 31 August 2019, 12 fake press cards were found among other items. The badges had photos of three persons whose occupations were actually businessman, bank staff and make-up artist.[85] Furthermore, the media agency did not exist at that time.

4.97 During the violent protests in August 2019, the Police fired a total of 2 187 rounds of tear gas, 405 rubber rounds, 43 super sock rounds, 130 react rounds and three live rounds. 751 persons were arrested.[86] Chapter 12 contains a detailed study of the Prince Edward Station Incident on 31 August 2019.

---

85 Information provided by HKPF.

86 Ibid.

Protests in September 2019:

September 2019						
Sun	**Mon**	**Tue**	**Wed**	**Thu**	**Fri**	**Sat**
1 Traffic disruption at the Airport	2 Student & work strikes	3 Student & work strikes	4 The Chief Executive announced the Fugitive Offenders Bill be withdrawn	5	6	7 Traffic disruption at the Airport
8	9	10	11	12	13	14 Vigilantism in Kowloon Bay
15 Clashes on Hong Kong Island	16	17	18	19	20	21 Tuen Mun & Yuen Long protests "Yellow object" incident
22 The body of a female VTC student found Clashes in various districts	23	24	25	26	27	28 Violent protests commemorating the OCM in 2014
29 Banned march on Hong Kong Island with a warning live round fired at Wan Chai Indonesian reporter hurt her right eye	30					

Highlights of September

- **Violent protesters paralysing all traffic to the Airport on 1 September causing flights cancelled.**
- **MTR stations, shops and bank branches that have links to the Mainland or alleged to be connected to Fujianese community continued to be vandalised and set on fire in protests throughout September 2019.**
- **Violent protesters using Incident on 21 July 2019 to rally violent protests in Tuen Mun and Yuen Long on 21 September 2019.**
- **Violent protesters were suspicious about the death of a female student on 22 September 2019 despite the family's plea that the incident not be used for. City-wide violent protests with damage to shops and restaurants considered by protesters as pro-Government.**
- **"Global Anti-Totalitarianism March" was held on 29 September 2019 with a live round fired for warning at Wan Chai.**

4.98 Following the severely violent protests in August 2019, the protests in September 2019 were considerably less violent and less frequent. Meanwhile, MTR stations had become frequent targets of repeated vandalism and arson in violent protests.

<u>Sunday 1 September 2019 - Paralysing Traffic to the Airport</u>

4.99 The protesters did not stage any demonstration or assembly at the Airport after the Airport Authority had obtained an injunction order forbidding from the Court. On 1 September 2019, however, protesters resumed their disturbances to the Airport, this time by disrupting the traffic going to the transportation hub. At around 14:18, they set up barricades with trolleys and other miscellaneous items near the bus terminal of the Airport. Cars and buses were unable to reach the Airport. Passengers and air crews had to walk all the way from Tung Chung. Commuters and passengers could not take the Airport Express to the Airport as the service had been disrupted by objects thrown to the restricted area of the railway track by protesters. Some violent protesters also damaged the facilities at Tung Chung Station and Tsing Yi Station. When police officers walked to the Airport for dispersal action, the protesters left area on foot and returned to the urban area by ferry or by bus. 25 flights were cancelled.[87]



Image 4-44: Netizens called for a traffic disruption at the Airport on 1 September 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

87 Airport Authority (2019-09-01). Traffic to and from Airport severely obstructed by public assembly Airport Authority implements contingency measures to safeguard normal operations of Terminal Buildings. Retrieved from https://www.hongkongairport.com/en/media-centre/press-release/2019/pr_1427



Image 4-45: Protesters set up barriers with trollies at the Airport
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-46: Protesters discharged a fire hose in Tung Chung Station
(Image source: HK01)

4.100 The protesters later called for another disruption to the Airport on 7 September 2019. The Police set up road blocks for search on the motorway to the Airport. A number of people, found carrying helmets and masks in their bags, were taken away by the Police.[88] The Police also warned drivers against intentionally driving slowly on the motorway on Lantau Island. An SCMV, tow trucks and armoured vehicles were arranged on stand-by at nearby locations. Bailiffs were present at the Airport, asking people to leave if they were not taking any flights.[89]

[88] HK01 (2019-09-07). 【9.7 機場・圖輯】警機場內外嚴陣戒備 拖車、搜身、拉人. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/18 區新聞/372741/9-7 機場-圖輯-警機場內外嚴陣戒備-拖車-搜身-拉人

[89] HK01 (2019-09-07). 【9.7 機場】水炮車裝甲車戒備 三千警力中環至東涌佈防. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/372644/9-7 機場-水炮車裝甲車戒備-三千警力中環至東涌佈防

HK01 (2019-09-08). 【9.7 機場・分析】警高調堵截 執達吏厲行禁令 機場示威者減. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/372780/9-7 機場-分析-警高調堵截-執達吏厲行禁令-機場示威者減

SCMP (2019-09-07). As it happened: violent clashes escalate in Hong Kong as protesters corner officers in Sha Tin MTR control room. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3026145/hong-kong-protests-shift-mtr-stations-and-malls-earlier



Image 4-47: Netizens called for a second traffic disruption at the Airport on 7 September 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-48: An armoured vehicle stood by at Lantau Link Toll Plaza in Tung Chung

(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-49: A vehicle was towed away
(Image source: HK01)

<u>Wednesday 4 to Tuesday 10 September 2019 – Protesters Vandalised MTR Stations and Besieged Mong Kok Police Station</u>

4.101 Since 24 August 2019, MTR stations became targets of repeated vandalism by violent protesters after they dubbed MTRC as a "Communist Party's railway". Between 4 and 8 September 2019, violent protesters sabotaged the facilities of a number of MTR stations, including Admiralty, Causeway Bay, Central, Mong Kok, Po Lam, Prince Edward, Sha Tin, Tai Po Market, Tin Hau, Tseung Kwan O, Wan Chai and Yau Ma Tei.[90] As a result, on 13 September 2019, MTRC planned to hire former members of the Brigade of Gurkhas in Hong Kong to tackle the problem.[91]

4.102 Mong Kok Police Station was also a target of siege and attack. It was besieged every night between 2 and 4 September, 6 September, 21 September and 22 September 2019.[92]

---

[90] Transport and Housing Bureau, the HKSAR Government (November 2019). Measures and train service arrangements implemented by the MTR to cope with large scale public order events. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr19-20/english/panels/tp/tp_rdp/papers/tp_rdp20191206cb4-153-5-e.pdf

[91] SCMP (2019-09-15). MTR chief Jacob Kam takes heat for plan to use Gurkhas as railway enforcers because they do not know Cantonese curse words. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3027269/mtr-chief-jacob-kam-takes-heat-plan-usegurkhas-railway

[92] SCMP (2019-09-03). Tear gas fired in Mong Kok stand-off as protesters target police station and block roads in escalating anger at force amid two-day citywide strike. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3025364/thousands-gather-tamar-park-rally-hong- kong-protesters

Stand News (2019-09-04). 太子站男子被警制服 疑昏迷送院 九龍灣截停巴士帶走多人 街坊包圍罵警. Retrieved from https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/太子站男子被警制服-疑昏迷送院-九龍灣截停巴士帶走多人-街坊包圍罵警/

HK01 (2019-09-05). 【示威現場】過百人圍旺角警署及北大嶼警署 寶琳站落閘. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/371679/示威現場-過百人圍旺角警署及北大嶼警署-寶琳站落閘

SCMP (2019-09-07). Hong Kong protests: tear gas fired on Nathan Road as demonstrations force closure of multiple MTR stations, including Prince Edward, Mong Kok and Yau Ma Tei. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/transport/article/3026054/prince-edward-mtr-station-closed-

Monday 2 September to Tuesday 3 September – Student and Work Strikes

4.103 On 2 September 2019, several thousand secondary and tertiary students from 230 schools took part in strikes at their schools. Around 3 000 people attended a sit-in assembly at The Chinese University of Hong Kong (CUHK). At around 21:00, people gathered at the Prince Edward Station to commemorate the Prince Edward Station Incident on 31 August 2019 and sprayed the MTR CCTV cameras with black ink. They later besieged the nearby Mong Kok Police Station, throwing eggs and shining laser beams at the station. They then occupied Nathan Road. The Police responded with tear gas and pepper spray. The violent protesters dispersed late at night.[93]

Wednesday 4 September 2019 – the Chief Executive Withdrew the Fugitive Offenders Bill

4.104 On 4 September 2019, the Chief Executive announced that the Government would withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill.[94] After the announcement, the violent protests abated for a while before the momentum picked up from mid-September onwards.

crowds-gather-inside

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekendprotest-tuen-mun

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: how Hong Kong protesters went on mall and MTR rampage, as police fired tear gas and beanbag rounds. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029698/sha-tin-mtr-closes-hong-kong-protesters-vandalise-mall

93 HK01 (2019-09-03). 【太子衝突】記者遭警推跌 警拘多人包括浸大學生會長方仲賢. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/370789/太子衝突-記者遭警推跌-警拘多人包括浸大學生會長方仲賢

SCMP (2019-09-02). Thousands attend Hong Kong rally to kick off university class boycott. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3025342/protesting-pupils-gather-hong-kong-class-boycott-rally

94 Information Services Department, the HKSAR Government (2019-09-04). CE announces withdrawal of Fugitive Offenders Bill among “four actions” to help society move forward. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201909/04/P2019090400704.htm

Thursday 5 September 2019 – Peaceful "Human Chains"

4.105 On 5 September 2019, some secondary students joined their hands to form "human chains" in Mid-levels and Tin Shui Wai.[95] Students of schools in other areas were similarly engaged.

Sunday 8 September 2019 – Peaceful March to the Consulate General of the United States (US)

4.106 On 8 September 2019, thousands of protesters marched to the Consulate General of the US in Central, urging the US Government to enact the Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act.[96]

Saturday 14 September 2019 – Clashes in Kowloon Bay

4.107 In the afternoon of 14 September 2019, a scuffle broke out outside Kowloon Bay Station between pro-establishment and anti-Government groups. There was also fighting and confrontation between the two camps inside Amoy Plaza and at a Lennon Wall nearby.[97]

Sunday 15 September 2019 – Violent Protests on Hong Kong Island

4.108 CHRF organised a march on 15 September 2019 to walk from East Point Road in Causeway Bay to Chater Road in Central. Despite Police disapproval of the event, protesters proceeded as scheduled. During the procession, some violent protesters threw petrol bombs and bricks at CGC, and set barricades on the eastbound Harcourt Road and Hennessy Road outside the closed Sogo Department Store. They also burnt a National Flag outside a hotel in Wan Chai, damaged the CCTV camera outside Wan Chai Station and set fire at its Exit A3. Some protesters smashed the glass panels at Exit A of Admiralty Station at the Admiralty Centre and

---

95 SCMP (2019-09-05). Students at Hong Kong secondary schools form human chains as part of class boycott, with pupils at one accusing management of restricting freedom of expression. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/education/article/3025924/students-hong-kong-secondary-schools-form-human-chains

RTHK (2019-09-05). 市民發起「天水圍人鏈」行動 有中學生穿校服參與. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1479013-20190905.htm

96 SCMP (2019-09-08). Hongkongers march on US consulate to call for human rights help. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3026218/hongkongers-march-us-consulate-calling-human-rights-help

97 SCMP (2019-09-15). As it happened: Hong Kong protests: brawls, skirmishes and stand-offs followed by mass singing in mall. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3027239/hong-kong-protests-fighting-breaks-out-when-pro-government

barricaded the exit with water-filled barriers and other objects.[98]

4.109 In response, the Police fired tear gas, rubber rounds and react rounds at various locations including areas outside Admiralty Station, Tim Wa Avenue, Harcourt Road in Admiralty, and Hennessey Road near Wan Chai Station. An SCMV discharged water with blue-dyed outside CGC to disperse the crowds at Harcourt Road. According to the Police, protesters threw more than 80 petrol bombs, some of which landed on the SCMV, the "Civic Square" outside CGC and Harcourt Road in Admiralty.[99] In Wan Chai, around 20 protesters attacked two traffic police officers with petrol bombs near the junction of Gloucester Road and Marsh Road. In the face of such violent acts of the protesters, the officers had to draw their guns in self-defence.[100]

4.110 In the evening, some protesters fought with a large group of Fujianese in Fortress Hill while the Police dispersed the violent protesters in North Point by firing rounds of tear gas.[101]

4.111 On 15 September 2019, the Police fired 62 rounds of tear gas, 17 rubber rounds and 18 react rounds, and arrested 57 persons.[102]

---

98 HK01 (2019-09-16). 【9.15 示威・全日總覽】水炮車、燃燒彈互攻 北角晚間民間互毆. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/375371/9-15 示威-全日總覽-水炮車-燃燒彈互攻-北角晚間民間互毆

SCMP (2019-09-15). As it happened: tear gas fired amid street brawls between rival camps in North Point, after day of protest violence in Hong Kong. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3027308/causeway-bay-shops-close-illegal-march-kicks-hong-kongs

99 HK01 (2019-09-16). 【9.15 示威・全日總覽】水炮車、燃燒彈互攻 北角晚間民間互毆. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/375371/9-15 示威-全日總覽-水炮車-燃燒彈互攻-北角晚間民間互毆

SCMP (2019-09-15). As it happened: tear gas fired amid street brawls between rival camps in North Point, after day of protest violence in Hong Kong. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3027308/causeway-bay-shops-close-illegal-march-kicks-hong-kongs

100 HK01 (2019-09-16). 【915 衝突】警方：兩警因生命受威脅而拔槍示警. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/375577/915 衝突-警方-兩警因生命受威脅而拔槍示警

101 HK01 (2019-09-16). 【9.15 示威・全日總覽】水炮車、燃燒彈互攻 北角晚間民間互毆. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/375371/9-15 示威-全日總覽-水炮車-燃燒彈互攻-北角晚間民間互毆

102 RTHK NEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3

Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749



Image 4-50: A violent protester threw a petrol bomb towards the Police
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-51: An exit of Wan Chai Station was burnt by protesters
(Image source: HK01)

Saturday 21 September 2019 – Violent Protests in Tuen Mun and Yuen Long

4.112 21 September 2019 was the two-month commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident on 21 July 2019. There were appeals on the internet to "Reclaim Tuen Mun" on 21 September 2019 in protest against the "dama" in Tuen Mun Park causing nuisance to the neighbourhood. It was the second protest in Tuen Mun over this, the first having been on 6 July 2019. The Police objected to the march but the Appeal Board on Public Meetings and Processions allowed it but with shorter duration, from 14:00 to 17:00.[103]

[103] HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威・總覽】屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/18 區新聞/377759/9-21 示威-總覽-屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突放催淚彈



Image 4-52: Netizens called for protests on 21 September 2019 to commemorate the Yuen Long Incident
(Image Source: LIHKG)

4.113 That afternoon, hundreds of protesters marched from San Wo Lane Playground to Tuen Mun Government Offices. When the procession reached the Government Offices around 15:43, some protesters burnt the National Flag and damaged the facilities at the Light Rail Station, causing MTRC to stop the Light Rail service and the connecting bus service. Some protesters proceeded to put up barricades with mills barriers and water-filled barriers and set various objects on fire on the roads. According to the Police, some of them were equipped with metal rods, catapults and laser pointers. The protesters remained on the road despite repeated warnings by the Police.[104]

4.114 The protests soon escalated into clashes between the violent protesters and the Police. Violent protesters threw rocks, hard objects and petrol bombs at the police officers who responded with tear gas and other less-lethal weapons. Some protesters discharged fire extinguishers at the Police cordon line. Many shops pulled down the shutters. The violent protests very soon spread out to other locations.

4.115 In one episode at Tuen Hi Road, when a police officer subdued an escaping protester onto the ground, at least seven violent protesters came to his rescue. These violent protesters

[104] HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威・總覽】屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/377759/9-21示威-總覽-屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突-警放催淚彈

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hongkong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun

hit the police officer with umbrellas, metal poles and wooden poles. One violent protester even attempted to snatch the officer's firearm, though unsuccessful. These violent protesters quickly dispersed when Police reinforcement arrived. Most of the protesters left the area by 18:30.[105]

4.116 Two LegCo Members were at Tuen Wui Street near Tuen Mun Town Hall. They tried to get the name and the identity card number of a protester arrested by the Police. One of them told the arrested protester that they could provide legal assistance to him.[106]

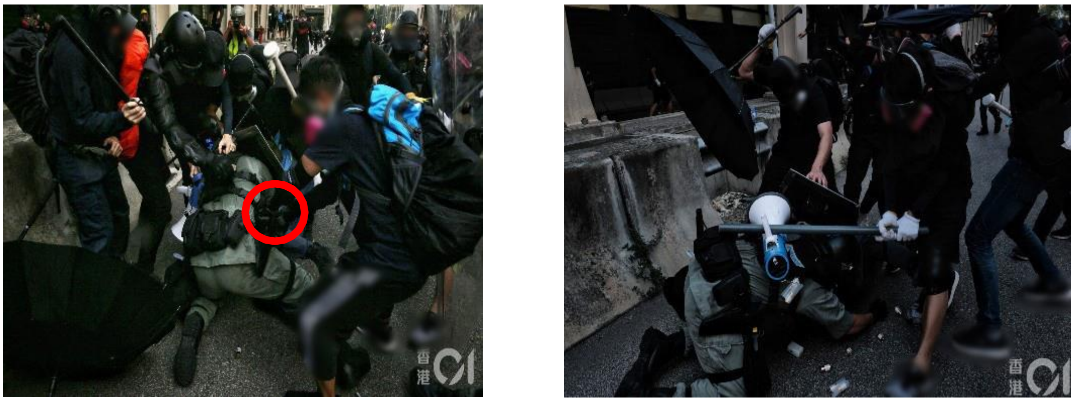


Image 4-53: Violent protesters attacked a police officer in Tuen Mun and one of them attempted to snatch his gun on 21 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.117 Many protesters planned a sit-in protest inside the Yuen Long Station to commemorate the Yuen Long Incident. As MTRC closed the Yuen Long Station early, the protesters went to the adjacent Yoho Mall where they chanted "Liberate Hong Kong; revolution of our times" and sang "Glory to Hong Kong". Some of them sprayed alcohol and slippery liquid on the floor at the entrance to Yuen Long Station from Yoho Mall.[107]

---

105 HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 屯門示威】示威者搶警棍毆防暴警 黑衣人疑搶警槍遭打走. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/18 區新聞/377907/9-21 屯門示威-示威者搶警棍毆防暴警-黑衣人疑搶警槍遭打走

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun

106 SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun

107 HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威・總覽】屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/18 區新聞/377759/9-21 示威-總覽-屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警衝突-警放催彈

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protest. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun

4.118 Later in the evening, many protesters appeared at different locations in the town area of Yuen Long, including Fung Yau Street North and Fung Cheung Street. Subsequently, there were clashes between the protesters and the Police. The protesters hurled petrol bombs at the police officers, and who then fired tear gas at the violent protesters in Fung Cheung Street. Meanwhile, at Fung Yau Street North, a member of "Protect the Children" wearing a yellow T-shirt was arrested by the Police for "Assaulting Police Officer" and taken to a back alley.[108] It was claimed that police officers kicking this person here was captured on videos.[109] However, the Police in a press conference stated that the videos only showed a "yellow object", not a person.[110] This response created widespread backlash from some netizens for dehumanising a person. The violent protests lasted until midnight.



Image 4-54: A protester threw a petrol bomb towards a police vehicle in Yuen Long on 21 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)

[108] HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威・總覽】屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/18 區新聞/377759/9-21 示威-總覽-屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突-警放催淚彈

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun

[109] HK01 (2019-09-24). 【9.21 元朗示威】被捕守護孩子義工獲釋 好鄰舍尋疑警襲擊片 搜證. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/378593/9-21 元朗示威-被捕守護孩子義工獲釋-好鄰舍尋疑警襲擊片搜證

[110] SCMP (2019-09-27). Hong Kong police slammed for 'kicking man in an alley and referring to him as a yellow object when questioned' in online post by self-proclaimed family member. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030564/self-proclaimed-family-member- arrested-suspect-condemns



Image 4-55: Netizens expressed their discontent over the “yellow object” incident
(Image Source: LIHKG)

4.119 That evening in Mong Kok, some violent protesters blocked Nathan Road with rubbish bins, railings and other objects. They also besieged Mong Kok Police Station. The Police reacted with PAVA solution. In Tseung Kwan O, the Police arrested a 13-year-old boy for “Unlawful Assembly”, “POOW” and “Possession of Instrument Fit for Unlawful Purpose”. Some local residents were angered by the police action and over 100 people besieged Tseung Kwan O Police Station. They hurled objects at the police station, set up barricades at the vehicular entrance there. The Police fired tear gas.[111]

4.120 On 21 September 2019, the Police fired 43 rounds of tear gas, six rubber rounds, one super sock round and 11 react rounds. The Police arrested 31 persons.[112]

---

[111] HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威・總覽】屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/18 區新聞/377759/9-21 示威-總覽-屯門元朗掟燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突催淚彈

[112] RTHK NEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3

Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749

Sunday 22 September 2019 - Naked Body of an Female Student Found and Clashes in Different Districts

4.121 On 22 September 2019, a naked body of a 15-year-old female student of Vocational Training Council (VTC), who attended classes in the campus of Hong Kong Design Institute (HKDI), was found in the sea near Yau Tong. Rumours immediately circulated on the internet that she had been killed by the Government for taking part in the protests even though the Police asserted thatthe cause of her death was not suspicious. She was last seen at HKDI on the afternoon of 19 September 2019 as CCTV footage revealed. On 15 October 2019, HKDI management acceded to demands by students to release the CCTV capturing her appearance at HKDI. Dissatisfied with subsequent partial release of the footage, some disgruntled students vandalised the school premises, damaged surveillance cameras and set off a fire alarm. HKDI had to suspend classes between 15 and 17 October 2019.[113] Meanwhile, the student's mother clarified on television news that she had no suspicion over her daughter's death and pleaded for peace for the family at the time of grief.[114] Many continued to insist that the student had been killed.[115]

---

113 CitizenNews (2019-10-12). 警稱 15 歲少女陳彥霖「死亡情況及背景沒可疑」 塗謹申：遺體雖火化，仍可召開死因研訊. Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/24125/浮屍-陳彥霖-死因庭-24125/浮屍

HK01 (2019-10-15). 【油塘女浮屍】香港知專設計學院宣佈 多個學院今起停課三日. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/386026/油塘女浮屍-香港知專設計學院宣佈-多個學院今起停課三日

114 Apple Daily (2019-10-17). 陳彥霖母親接受 TVB 訪問：我個女係自殺唔係被殺. Retrieved from https://hk.appledaily.com/local/20191017/Z3RDTQXKD3RCILQCLICQSECZTE/

115 The Epoch Times (2020-01-01). 網爆陳彥霖死亡真相：港警勾結大陸特務強姦勒斃. Retrieved from https://hk.epochtimes.com/news/2020-01-01/31162387



Image 4-56: Netizens had doubts on the cause of death of the student
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.122 On 22 September 2019, there were sporadic disturbances flared at different locations. The protesters vandalised shops like Best Mart 360 and restaurants operated by Maxim's Caterers Limited at different shopping malls. Some violent protesters also damaged the facilities inside Nam Cheong Station, West Kowloon Station, Sha Tin Station and the adjacent New Town Plaza. Some protesters took down the National Flag, stamped and splashed water on it before throwing it into Shing Mun River.[116] In Tsing Yi, the vehicle of a Principal Government Official was besieged by protesters after he had attended an event celebrating the National Day. They threw different kinds of objects such as metal rod and rubbish bin at the vehicle, causing damage to the windscreen. The vehicle could leave only with the assistance of riot police officers.[117] On 22 September 2019, the Police arrested 53 persons.[118]

---

116 HK01 (2019-09-23). 【922・圓方】示威者設路障 警舉藍旗 港鐵宣佈關閉九龍站. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/377916/922-圓方-示威者設路障-警舉藍旗-港鐵宣佈關閉九龍站

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: how Hong Kong protesters went on mall and MTR rampage, as police fired tear gas and beanbag rounds. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029698/sha-tin-mtr-closes-hong-kong-protesters-vandalise-mall

117 HK01 (2019-09-23). 【9.22】時序重組 塞機場變陣 聶德權被圍 多區商場爆衝突. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/378113/9-22-時序重組-塞機場變陣-聶德權被圍-多區商場爆衝突

118 Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749



Image 4-57: Protesters vandalised Sha Tin New Town Plaza on 22 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)

Saturday 28 September 2019 – A March to commemorate OCM

4.123 On 28 September 2019, CHRF held an assembly with a LoNO at Tamar Park to commemorate OCM in 2014. CHRF estimated that around 200 000 to 300 000 had joined the assembly while the Police estimated around 8 440 at peak time. Some violent protesters threw petrol bombs and bricks at CGC. The Police used PAVA solution and fired tear gas to disperse them. SCMV was also deployed. In Mong Kok, some violent protesters threw petrol bombs at the police station.[119] On that day, the Police used five rounds of tear gas, three rubber rounds and 13 react rounds, and arrested 11 persons.[120]

Sunday 29 September 2019 - "Global Anti-Totalitarianism March"

4.124 On 29 September 2019, without applying for a LoNO, netizens organised a procession entitled "Global Anti-Totalitarianism March", to walk from Causeway Bay to CGC. That day, the Police mobilised two SCMVs and two armoured vehicles to stand by at LOCPG and another SCMV and armoured vehicle at CGC.[121]

119 HK01 (2019-09-29). 【9.28 集會・全日總覽】警舉藍旗警告 旺角警署一度冒黑煙. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/380355/9-28 集會-全日總覽-警舉藍旗警告-旺角警署一度冒黑煙

120 RTHK NEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表 . Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3
Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749

121 HK01 (2019-09-30). 【9.29 遊行·全日總覽】警員旺角警署開數槍 現場遺數布袋彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/380557/9-29 遊行-全日總覽-警員旺角警署開數槍-現場遺數布袋彈

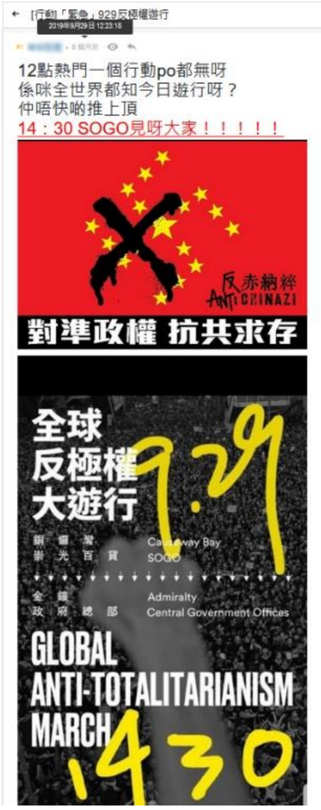


Image 4-58: Netizens called for a march on 29 September 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.125 Before the march began, violent protesters occupied Hennessy Road in Causeway Bay. Scuffles broke out when they hurled bricks and petrol bombs at police officers.[122] As a result, the Police fired tear gas and rubber rounds to disperse them. In Wan Chai, other protesters smashed the glass panel at Exit A of Wan Chai Station and threw petrol bombs and bricks into the station, causing a small fire. Another group of violent protesters blocked Fenwick Street in Wan Chai. During these events in Wan Chai, violent protesters caused damages to outlets of Café de Coral and Starbucks, which they considered be pro-Government and owned by the Maxim's Caterers Limited.[123]

4.126 In Admiralty, violent protesters used rubbish bins and other objects to block the exits of Admiralty Station and threw a petrol bomb at Exit B. To disperse the protesters, the Police

---

[122] SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kong-streets-ahead-anti-government-march

[123] HK01 (2019-09-30). 【9.29 遊行·全日總覽】警員旺角警署開數槍 現場遺數布袋彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/380557/9-29 遊行-全日總覽-警員旺角警署開數槍-現場遺數布袋彈

SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030822/tensions hong-kong-streets-ahead-anti-government-march

fired tear gas and rubber rounds at different locations at Harcourt Road, outside Pacific Place, Cotton Tree Drive and Leighton Road. Protesters also threw petrol bombs at CGC. In Tim Wa Avenue, they hurled bricks from a mega sling shot over the water-filled barriers into CGC. The Police protected the building with tear gas, react rounds and SCMV.[124]

4.127 In the afternoon, a female Indonesian reporter was allegedly hit by a rubber round in the right eye,[125] when she was making live coverage on a footbridge in Wan Chai connecting to Immigration Tower. At the times, the Police was taking action to disperse the protesters on the footbridge and had asked everyone including reporters to leave. However, the protesters and the reporters remained there ignoring the warning of the Police. Suddenly, the Indonesian reporter was hit by something in her right eye and fell to the ground. She later became blind in her right eye and she alleged that it was caused by a rubber round. She plans to take private prosecution against the Police.[126] This matter gave protesters further reason to protest against police excessive use of force.

---

124 HK01 (2019-09-30). 【9.29 遊行·全日總覽】警員旺角警署開數槍 現場遺數布袋彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/380557/9-29 遊行-全日總覽-警員旺角警署開數槍-現場遺數布袋彈

SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kongstreets-ahead-anti-government-march

125 HK01 (2019-09-30). 【929 示威】印尼記者疑眼中彈 記協譴責對記者暴力. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/380779/929 示威-印尼記者疑眼中彈-記協譴責對記者暴力

126 Stand News (2020-01-03). 【印尼女記者案】警認曾發橡膠子彈 披露警員資料申請下月審. Retrieved from https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/右眼失明印尼記者-提私人檢控時限將屆-網民稱成功找出開槍警員身份/



Image 4-59: Netizens calling for "an eye for an eye" with the Police
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.128 In the late afternoon, a police officer suspected to be an undercover officer was attacked by protesters near Southorn Playground in Wan Chai. To protect himself from attack, he fired one round of warning shot into the air.[127] A video clip online showed that some 30 seconds before the warning shot was heard fired, protesters had thrown bricks at four individuals holding extendable batons and wearing black masks. About 80 protesters assaulted those four individuals before a man wearing a white helmet came to their rescue and fired one round of warning shot.[128]

---

[127] HK01 (2019-09-30). 【警方記者會】盤點三趴底行動兩敗露開槍解圍 網民發動 10.1 楔衫. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/380840/警方記者會-盤點三趴底行動兩敗露開槍解圍-網民發動 10-1 楔衫

SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kong-streets-ahead-anti-government-march

[128] SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kong-streets-ahead-anti-government-march

4.129 At night, some protesters besieged Mong Kok Police Station and set fire outside Prince Edward Station. The Police fired super sock rounds in response.[129]

4.130 On 29 September 2019, the Police fired 347 rounds of tear gas, 297 rubber rounds, 96 super sock rounds, 80 react rounds and one live round warning shot. The Police also arrested 135 persons.[130]



Image 4-60: A huge fire was caused by protesters in Hennessey Road, Wan Chai on 29 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-61: Protesters attacked a police vehicle in Queensway on 29 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)

[129] HK01 (2019-09-30). 【9.29 遊行・全日總覽】警員旺角警署開數槍 現場遺數布袋彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/380557/9-29 遊行-全日總覽-警員旺角警署開數槍-現場遺數布袋彈

[130] RTHK NEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表 . Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3
Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749

Protests in October 2019:

October 2019						
Sun	**Mon**	**Tue**	**Wed**	**Thu**	**Fri**	**Sat**
		1 National Day Protest First injury by live round in Tsuen Wan	2	3	4 Anti-mask Law announced Second injury by live round in Yuen Long	5 Anti-mask Law effective
6 Anti-mask Law Protests in Kowloon & HK Island	7	8	9	10	11	12
13 Territory-wide "Shopping Malls Protests" Officer's neck slashed in Kwun Tong	14 Protest at HKDI for the CCTV footage re the VTC student incident	15	16	17	18	19
20 Tsim Sha Tsui Procession SCMV sprayed blue-dyed water at Kowloon Mosque	21	22	23	24	25	26
27 Rally in Tsim Sha Tsui	28	29	30	31		

Highlights of October 2019

- **1 October National Day 2019 was marked by city-wide violence and unrest in a "National Grief March". The clashes were the most ferocious, disorderly and extensive since 12 June 2019. An 18-year-old student was injured by live round fired by a police officer in Tsuen Wan. This was used on the internet to rally further protests. On that day, five warning shots were also fired in some other districts.**
- **Prohibition on Face Covering Regulation (Anti-mask Law) announced on 4 October 2019 sparked a series of protests starting that day. A 14-year-old boy was shot by a plainclothes police officer under attack.**
- **Protesters continued to use Anti-mask Law to rally violent protests throughout October, more violent ones being those on 6 October, 13 October, 20 October and 27 October 2019. Tsim Sha Tsui and Mong Kok were the common battlegrounds with scenes of arson and vandalism along Nathan Road. On 13 October 2019, a police officer was slashed on the neck by a protester in Kwun Tong. On 20 October 2019, an SCMV discharged blue-dyed water at the entrance of the Kowloon Mosque in Tsim Sha Tsui, after which the Chief Executive apologised for the incident.**

Tuesday 1 October 2019 – Violent Protests on the National Day

4.131 The National Day celebration on 1 October 2019 was marred by violent unrest throughout the entire city and the shooting of an 18-year-old protester in Tsuen Wan. CHRF had applied for a LoNO to launch a "National Grief March" from Causeway Bay to Central in the afternoon of National Day but the Police rejected the application. Four pan-democrats then urged the public to disregard the Police ban and take part in the march as a form of civil disobedience. Defying the Police ban, tens of thousands of protesters took to the street to join the march.[131]



Image 4-62: A poster of CHRF calling for people to attend the protests on 28 September and 1 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.132 There were online appeals mobilising people to attend protests in six districts to "celebrate" on the "Day of National Mourning".[132] There were also online discussions inciting protesters to confront and attack police officers.[133] The protesters vowed to ruin the National Day celebrations.

---

[131] SCMP (2019-10-02). "Protester shot by police, trail of destruction across Hong Kong, while Beijing celebrates National Day". Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031161/protester-shot-police-trail-destruction-across-hong-kong

[132] https://lihkg.com/thread/1606490/page/1

[133] https://lihkg.com/thread/1607154/page/1?post=1



Image 4-63: A poster on LIHKG calling for protests in six districts
on the "1 October National Mourning"
(Image source: LIHKG)

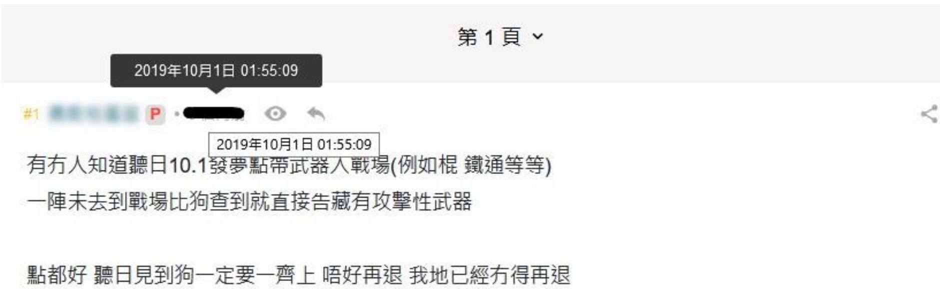


Image 4-64: One of the posts appeared on LIHKG urging people
to attack police officers on 1 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.133 In anticipation of severe violence from protesters, a large number of police officers were deployed to protect the HKCEC where the celebration activities would take place and in various districts where violent protests would be held. The Police warned the public of the serious danger from some protesters' plan for disturbances on 1 October 2019. The Police revealed that on 29 and 30 September 2019, they had arrested 22 people at multiple locations in connection with illegal assemblies and illegal possession of weapons, including materials for making petrol bombs, such as bottles of thinner, empty glass bottles, lighters, cloth strips for ignition which the Police believed were to be used in protests on 1 October 2019.

4.134 Out of safety concern, a number of major shopping malls all over Hong Kong, including IFC Mall, Sogo Department Store, Pacific Place, New Town Plaza, Telford Plaza, Yoho Mall were closed for the day. By 11:00, MTRC had closed 11 MTR stations, including Admiralty Station, Wan Chai Station, Causeway Bay Station and Prince Edward Station. As

violent protests erupted in a number of districts from afternoon to midnight, MTRC eventually closed more than 40 MTR stations. Before violent protests broke out, many shops had closed and streets normally teeming with people were almost deserted.[134]

4.135 Celebration activities at the HKCEC that morning went off without major incident. However, by noon, protesters wearing black outfits gathered at different locations in Causeway Bay, Wan Chai, Wong Tai Sin, Sham Shui Po, Tsuen Wan and Tuen Mun. Around 13:00, the procession in Causeway Bay started, occupying all lanes of Hennessy Road. Some participants carried a banner that read, "End the dictatorial rule. Return power to the people". They also chanted "Fight for freedom, stand with Hong Kong".

4.136 After 14:00, violence broke out between protesters and the Police in various districts, starting from Tuen Mun, Wong Tai Sin, Sha Tin and Sham Shui Po. Violent protesters tucked in their black T-shirts to distinguish themselves from plainclothes officers in disguise among them. They occupied roads, hurling bricks, other hard objects and petrol bombs at police officers. They set fire on a number of roads. In different locations there were huge fires. Police officers dispersed protesters with tear gas and other less-lethal weapons. Protesters were seen beating police officers with umbrellas and wooden poles in attempts to retrieve protesters subdued by police officers. In Tuen Mun, some violent protesters used corrosive liquid, injuring a number of police officers and some reporters. Very soon, violent protests spread to Mong Kok, Yau Ma Tei, Jordon and Tsim Sha Tsui.[135]

4.137 On Hong Kong Island, after the march reached Admiralty, thousands of protesters occupied Harcourt Road by putting up barricades with miscellaneous objects and setting fire on the road. Violent protesters hurled petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at police officers. The Police fired tear gas and deployed SCMVs to disperse the crowd.

4.138 There was extensive unrest across the city. Entrances of a number of MTR stations were set on fire; shops and banks connected to the Mainland were vandalised and set on fire; a mahjong parlour in Tsuen Wan was severely damaged; Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices was broken into and vandalised. Six live rounds were fired, two warning shots in Yau Ma Tei, two warning shots in Tsuen Wan, one warning shot in Wong Tai Sin and the remaining shot hit the chest of an 18-year old secondary school student in Tsuen Wan. The student was shot when together with other protesters, he attacked a police officer with weapons.[136] The incident was recorded on video and had been viewed by many citizens. The student was discharged from hospital after receiving treatment. It was the first injury caused by a live round since June 2019 and was subsequently used as propaganda to reinforce allegations of police brutality and to fuel the momentum of the protests in the following days.[137]

---

134 SCMP (2019-10-01). As it happened: Hong Kong protester shot in chest, six live rounds fired on National Day. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031044/chaos-expected-across-hong-kong-anti-government-protesters

135 Ming Pao Daily News (2019-10-02). 催淚彈對燃燒彈 多區激戰 25 警傷. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%E8%A6%81%E8%81%9E/article/20191002/s00001/1569955565533/催淚彈對燃燒彈-多區激戰 25 警傷

136 SCMP (2019-10-02). "Schoolmates of Hong Kong teen shot by police hold sit-in as college faces pressure to condemn force". Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031200/schoolmates-hong-kong-teen-shot-police-hold-sit-college

137 Facebook: https://www.facebook.com/DeMosDerivedFromMaOnShan/photos/pcb.1455599177911651/1455594997912069/?type=3&theater



Image 4-65: A graphic on facebook about the shooting on the National Day
(Image source: Facebook)

4.139 The event that led to the firing of the two warning shots in Yau Ma Tei was recorded on video. A police vehicle was under attack by protesters. The officers got off the police vehicle but were outnumbered by the violent protesters. In order to fend off further attacks, an officer fired two warning shots. In the event, the officer suffered bleeding injuries on his head.

4.140 The clashes on 1 October 2019 were the most serious with violence and the biggest in scale since June 2019. According to the Police, violent protesters used petrol bombs, corrosive fluid, bricks, metal rods and other hard objects as weapons. On that day the Police fired 1 667 rounds of tear gas, 1 156 rubber rounds, 267 super sock rounds and 248 react rounds in addition to six live rounds. The Police arrested a total of 299 people.

Friday 4 October 2019 – Violent Protests against Anti-mask Law

4.141 On 4 October 2019, the Government invoked the Emergency Regulations Ordinance to impose the Anti-mask Law banning facial covering during protests. Prior to the Chief Executive's announcement at 15:00, there were online appeals calling for people to attend an unapproved assembly at Chater Garden in Central to voice against the legislation at 12:30. Thousands of office workers turned out at Chater Garden. They later occupied the west-bound lanes of Des Voeux Road Central and the east-bound lanes of Connaught Road Central near International Finance Centre, blocking the traffic there.[138]

[138] Ming Pao Daily News (2019-10-04). 港九新界多區仍有人群聚集未散. Retrieved from https://m.mingpao.com/ins/%e6%b8%af%e8%81%9e/article/20191004/s00001/1570172333182/【禁蒙面法-示威】港九新界多區仍有人群聚集未散（不斷更新）



Image 4-66: A poster appeared on facebook calling for people to attend an assembly in Central on 4 October 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.142 Before 4 October 2019, there had been rumours about the Anti-mask Law and discussions in the community over whether the Chief Executive should enact the Anti-mask Law. On 3 October 2019, protesters turned up at 11 shopping malls throughout the territory to oppose the new law. In the evening, clashes between violent protesters and the Police broke out at Citiplaza in Tai Koo Shing.[139]

4.143 Soon after the announcement on 4 October 2019, there were online petitions for protesters to defy the new law, which was regarded by the netizens as a means of totalitarian rule and suppression of the protests.[140] Opposition to the Anti-mask Law became the theme for subsequent protests in October 2019 and protest slogans became more radical. The widely-used slogan of "香港人，加油" (Translation: Hongkongers, add oil) in previous protests evolved to "香港人，反抗" (Translation: Hongkongers, resist).[141] The demand of "追究警暴" (Translation: Investigate into police brutality) further turned into "解散警隊" (Translation: Disband the Police Force).

139 SCMP (2019-10-03). Tear gas and pepper spray in Tai Koo as anti-government protesters hold rallies across Hong Kong in protest to reports of law banning face masks. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031475/tear-gas-and-pepper-spray-tai-koo-anti-government

140 https://lihkg.com/thread/1616670/page/1

141 https://lihkg.com/thread/1627833/page/1



Image 4-67: A poster appeared on a LIHKG on 4 October 2019 appealing people to wear mask in defiance of the Anti-mask Law
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-68: A post appeared on LIHKG on 6 October 2019 with the new slogan "Hong Kong People, resist"
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.144 Following the Chief Executive's announcement of the new law at 15:00, several universities cancelled afternoon classes and many businesses and malls also closed early. Around 16:30, hundreds of protesters, many of them office workers in suits and students in school uniform, gathered in Central. The protesters built barricades on Man Yiu Street outside the Hong Kong Station to stop traffic on Connaught Road Central and Des Voeux Road Central. They burned the National Flag and a red banner with words celebrating for the National Day on the footbridge connecting Jardine House and Chater House.[142]

---

142 SCMP (2019-10-05). Rampaging Hong Kong protesters bring large parts of city to standstill, destroying property after anti-mask law announced. Retrieved from

4.145 In the evening, violent protests spread across the city, causing traffic chaos. Many protesters wore masks in defiance of the new law. They chanted "Hongkongers, resist" and "蒙面無罪 立法無理" (Translation: No crime to cover our face, no reason to enact the law) and occupied several major roads, including Harcourt Road and Hennessey Road on Hong Kong side, Nathan Road and Lung Cheung Road in Kowloon. Violent protesters also set up barricades to block the entrance of the Cross-Harbour Tunnel.[143] They vandalised and set fire on shops and bank branches linked to the Mainland and damaged some MTR stations. Some even set fire on the railroad tracks at Kowloon Tong Station while others hurled petrol bombs onto a train at Sha Tin Station.[144] Because of the violent acts of the protesters, and the damages to a number of MTR stations, MTRC suspended train services completely and closed all MTR stations at 22:30. Earlier around 22:00, the Police had carried out dispersal action in various districts including Causeway Bay, Wong Tai Sin and Tuen Mun, after which the mobs gradually disappeared. MTRC would re-open only half of the MTR stations on 6 October 2019.

4.146 Late night of 4 October 2019, another incident of firing one live round occurred, in Yuen Long at around 23:00. A plainclothes police officer was attacked from behind and was swamped by protesters knocking him to the ground and beating him. He pulled out his pistol and gunshot was heard amidst the chaos, whereupon the assailants immediately dispersed. At once, someone threw a petrol bomb at him and his trousers caught fire. The officer dropped his gun when he tried to put out the fire on his person. Someone attempted to pick up the gun but the officer managed to retrieve it. A 14 year-old boy was shot in his left thigh by that live round.[145]

4.147 On 4 October 2019, according to the Police, violent protesters attacked the officers with petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects. The Police fired 271 rounds of tear gas, 157 rubber rounds, 30 super sock rounds and 26 react rounds, in addition to the live round fired by the plainclothes officer in Yuen Long. The Police arrested 13 people on that day.

Sunday 6 October 2019 – Violent Protests after Enactment of Anti-mask Law

4.148 Prior to 6 October 2019, there were online appeals for people to take part in two unauthorised protests to be held on Hong Kong Island and in Kowloon on the afternoon of 6 October 2019 to oppose to the Anti-mask Law.[146]

---

https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031656/rampaging-hong-kong-protesters-bring-large-parts-city

143 SCMP (2019-10-04). As it happened: boy, 14, hit by bullet during night of violent protests in Hong Kong. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031515/hong-kong-leader-carrie-lam-announce-introduction-anti-mask

144 Apple Daily (2019-10-05). 沙田焚城 五港鐵站被毀. Retrieved from https://hk.appledaily.com/local/20191004/5TC24P6IERPHLLJ42K52UD54D4/

145 SCMP (2019-10-04). Hong Kong protests: teenage boy who suffered gunshot wound in leg arrested on suspicion of taking part in riots and attacking police officer. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031706/hong-kong-protests-teenage-boy-who-suffered-gunshot-wound

146 https://lihkg.com/thread/1628612/page/1



Image 4-69: A poster on LIHKG appealing people to participate in the two protests respectively held at Causeway Bay and Tsim Sha Tsui on 6 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.149 When the protesters marched on the streets, they wore masks in defiance of the new law. The marches subsequently turned chaotic and clashes with the Police flared up at different locations. Protesters blocked roads in Wan Chai, Admiralty, Sham Shui Po and Prince Edward, throwing bricks onto streets, hurling petrol bombs and vandalising shops with links to the Mainland.[147] Around 17:00, the Police fired tear gas to clear the crowds in Wan Chai and Admiralty.[148] At around 17:30 in Sham Shui Po, a taxi under attack by some protesters, rammed into a crowd and severely injured a female protester. Some protesters dragged the driver out from the taxi, to be immediately surrounded by a large crowd and badly beaten.[149]

4.150 On 6 October 2019, the Police fired 156 rounds of tear gas, 69 rubber rounds, three super sock rounds and five react rounds. The Police arrested 121 people that day.

Protests from Monday 7 October to Saturday 12 October 2019

4.151 During a protest on 7 October 2019, violent protesters had sporadic confrontation with the Police at various locations in Mong Kok, Tai Po, Ma On Shan and Tseung Kwan O.

---

[147] SCMP (2010-10-06). As it happened: Hong Kong protest chaos ends in Mong Kok stand-off as MTR again closes network. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031732/hong-kong-protesters-outraged-anti-mask-law-return-streets

[148] Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-05). HKFP Lens: Hong Kong rocked by further protests as emergency mask ban provokes more unrest. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/06/hkfp-lens-hong-kong-rocked-protests-emergency-mask-ban-provokes-unrest/

[149] SCMP (2019-10-10). Hong Kong taxi driver beaten by mob after car rams into crowd of protesters in Sham Shui Po gives account of crash. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3032381/hong-kong-taxi-driver-beaten-mob-after-car-rams-crowd

The Police responded with tear gas and less-lethal weapons.[150] On 10 October 2019, protesters wearing masks in defiance of the Anti-mask Law gathered outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station on the "World Sight Day" in support of the woman who suffered eye injury in the protest on 11 August 2019.[151] On 12 October 2019, over a thousand took part in an unauthorised but largely peaceful march from Tsim Sha Tsui to Sham Shui Po to protest against the Anti-mask Law.[152]

Sunday 13 October 2019 – Territory-wide Protests in Shopping Malls

4.152 Prior to 13 October 2019, there were online appeals mobilising people to deploy a strategy of popping up in small groups to protest in major shopping centres in different districts including Central, Mong Kok, Kowloon Bay, Kwun Tong, Tseung Kwan O, Tsuen Wan and Sha Tin.[153] To avoid being arrested, they were advised to "Be Water", to move quickly from one location to another and to contemplate an escape route at each new location.[154]

150 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-08). Hong Kong riot police storm Ma On Shan mall to make arrest, as multi-district protests, vandalism continue to fizzle. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/08/hong-kong-riot-police-storm-ma-shan-mall-make-arrest-multi-district-protests-vandalism-continue-fizzle/

151 RTHK (2019-10-10). Protest in Tsim Sha Tsui to support injured woman. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1485417-20191010.htm?archive_date=2019-10-10

152 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-12). 'We are not afraid': Over a thousand Hongkongers protest gov't use of emergency law. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/12/not-afraid-thousand-hongkongers-protest-govt-use-emergency-law/

153 The Guardian (2019-10-13). Hong Kong protesters use new flashmob strategy to avoid arrest. Retrieved from https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/oct/13/hong-kong-protesters-flashmobs-blossom-everywhere

154 https://lihkg.com/thread/1649018/page/1



Image 4-70: A poster on LIHKG calling for people to adopt "Be Water" flash-mob strategy to cause unrest in shopping malls in various districts on 13 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.153 Starting from 13:00, violent protesters vandalised and sprayed graffiti at MTR stations, shops and bank branches that had links to the Mainland inside the shopping malls they visited. Later on, they took to the streets to continue to cause damage and set fire at various spots. Scenes of vandalism were ubiquitous in shopping malls and on streets in many districts.[155] A total of 27 MTR stations, including Wong Tai Sin Station, Cheung Sha Wan Station and Tseung Kwan O Station, were forced to close. All service on the Tsuen Wan MTR line were suspended. Violent protesters also caused damages to Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices, Tai Po Government Offices and the offices of some pro-Government LegCo Members. They blocked roads, sabotaged the traffic lights and set objects on fire. The violent protesters moved swiftly to other locations before Police arrival.

4.154 Police officers were targets of attack when they took action in the late afternoon, especially in the course of their making arrests. In Tseung Kwan O, two plainclothes police officers were assaulted by a protester after being found out that they were police officers. At Kwun Tong Station, a police officer was slashed on the neck by an 18-year old student,

[155] SCMP (2019-10-13). As it happened: policeman slashed in the neck amid citywide protests in Hong Kong. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3032714/flash-mob-protests-flare-across-hong-kong-groups-smash

sustaining a five centimetre cut wound close to the carotid artery. He was with his team on their way to handle a case of "Criminal Damage" there. The assailant was arrested at the scene and charged with wounding the police officer.[156,157]

4.155 At 21:00, a homemade bomb by remote controlled placed in a roadside flower bed on Nathan Road in Mong Kok exploded soon after a police vehicle drove past. The police officers were nearby clearing road blocks set up by the protesters. Luckily, there was no casualty.

4.156 13 October 2019 was another day of anarchy, chaos and violence in the entire city. Apparently with the flash-mob strategy for protesters to act in small groups and to leave very quickly, the Police only fired two rounds of tear gas, seven rubber rounds, 24 super sock rounds and six react rounds. Significant number of people, 178, were arrested.

Protests from Monday 14 October to Saturday 19 October 2019

4.157 On 14 October 2019, an assembly was held at night in Chater Garden, the first protest with LoNO since the Anti-mask Law came into force. Thousands of protesters called for the US to enact the "Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act". The organiser claimed that more than 130 000 had taken part in the rally, while the Police estimated 25 000 at the peak.[158] On 18 October 2019, protesters formed human chains across the city in major areas such as Tsuen Wan, Sha Tin, Tai Wai, Causeway Bay, chanting slogan "五大訴求 缺一不可" (Translation: Five demands, not one less).[159]

Sunday 20 October 2019 – Violent Protests in Kowloon

4.158 Despite the Police refusal of CHRF's application for launching a march in the afternoon of 20 October 2019 from Tsim Sha Tsui to the West Kowloon Station to protest against the Anti-mask Law and to condemn police brutality, CHRF went ahead with the procession.[160] After the event, CHRF declared that 350 000 had taken part.

---

156 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-13). Protester 'slashed police officer's neck' with sharp object, amid clashes and vandalism across Hong Kong. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/13/protester-slashed-police-officers-neck-sharp-object-amid-clashes-vandalism-across-hong-kong/

157 SCMP (2019-11-08). Hong Kong police officer slashed in neck reveals fears of leaving behind his family and the difficulty of talking to his children because of his injury. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3036801/hong-kong-police-officer-slashed-neck-reveals-fears

158 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-15). Fight with Hong Kong: 130,000 gather to urge US to pass human rights act to monitor city's autonomy, organisers say. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/15/fight-hong-kong-130000-gather-urge-us-pass-human-rights-act-monitor-citys-autonomy-organisers-say/

159 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-19). Hongkongers don Pepe, Guy Fawkes, Winnie-the-Pooh and Xi Jinping masks at human chain protest against new law. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/19/hongkongers-don-pepe-guy-fawkes-winnie-xi-jinping-masks-human-chain-protest-new-law/

160 https://lihkg.com/thread/1655245/page/1

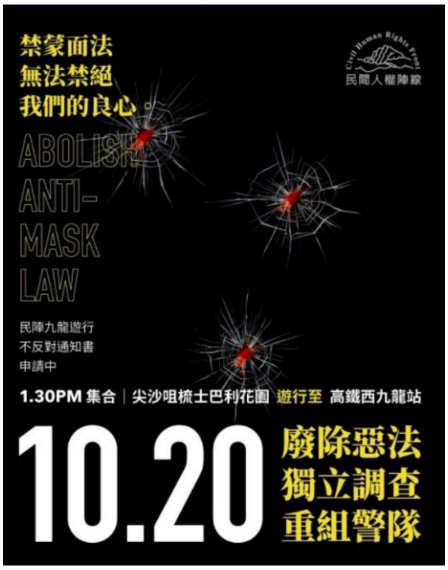


Image 4-71: A poster of CHRF calling for people to participate in the 20 October March in Tsim Sha Tsui
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-72: A post appeared on LIHKG calling for people to take up different roles in the protest on 20 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.159 During the event, many protesters digressed to Nathan Road in Tsim Sha Tsui then along Nathan Road to Prince Edward and even further to Sham Shui Po, some violent protesters continued to target MTR stations, shops connected with the Mainland or having ties with Fujianese community. When some violent protesters committed acts of criminal damage, other protesters would open umbrellas to block the view from outside and shield individual from being identified. They spray-painted, vandalised and threw petrol bombs into Mong Kok Station, Yau Ma Tei Station and Austin Station. MTR stations between Tsim Sha Tsui and Prince Edward were closed after 16:00. Branches of Mainland-owned banks were not spared.

A news footage captured some violent protesters breaking into a branch of the Bank of China and throwing a petrol bomb into it. For unknown reasons, however, some violent protesters damaged a branch of the Bank of East Asia, after which someone spray-painted an apology on the glass panel, "Sorry, wrong bank." Protesters surrounded Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station and hurled petrol bombs inside. Later, they surrounded Mong Kok Police Station. Police officers fired tear gas at the violent protesters from within.[161]



Image 4-73: A group of protesters vandalising MTR Station in Yau Mau Tei with others covering them with umbrellas on 20 October 2019
(Image source: Now TV)

4.160 Around 15:15, the Police took action in response to the riotous acts of the violent protesters. Tear gas and other less-lethal weapons were fired. Around 16:10, an SCMV was deployed to clear the violent protesters along Nathan Road from Tsim Sha Tsui to Mong Kok. When the SCMV drove past the Kowloon Mosque in Tsim Sha Tsui, it sprayed blue-dyed water at the gates of the Mosque and a group of people including a former President of the Indian Association of Hong Kong and a pan-democratic LegCo Member there.[162] The Police issued a statement to apologise for the incident, explaining that the mosque was not a target in the operation. The Chief Executive later also apologised to the Muslim community.[163]

4.161 Following the enforcement action by the riot police officers and the SCMV, protesters went to Mong Kok and Prince Edward, later that evening to become a major battlefield. An additional SCMV was deployed for dispersal. Around 19:00, riot officers advanced down Nathan Road. The two SCMVs together with an armoured vehicle crashed through the road blocks set up by protesters. When violent protesters hurled bricks and petrol bombs at them, the police officers fired tear gas and rubber rounds in response. The turmoil lasted until midnight when most of the protesters in Mong Kok had dispersed.

4.162 On 20 October 2019, according to the Police, violent protesters used petrol bombs, bricks, sling shots and other hard objects to attack the officers. The Police fired 266 rounds of

---

161 SCMP (2019-10-20). As it happened: Hong Kong arson spree on stores such as Xiaomi, Best Mart 360 and Tong Ren Tang amid protests. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3033714/protesters-block-roads-during-illegal-march-hong-kong

162 SCMP (2019-10-20). Muslim Council of Hong Kong appeals for calm after police water cannons spray blue dye at front of Kowloon Mosque. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3033792/hong-kong-ethnic-minority-groups-safe-reprisal-attacks

163 Reuters (2019-10-21). Hong Kong leader apologizes after mosque hit by police water cannon". Retrieved from https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-protests/hong-kong-leader-apologizes-for-mosque-water-cannon-incident-after-day-of-violence-idUSKBN1X004X

tear gas, 140 rubber rounds, 19 super sock rounds and 43 react rounds. The Police arrested 60 people.

Protests from Monday 21 October to Saturday 26 October 2019

4.163 On 24 October 2019, a rally was launched to support protesters in Catalonia, Spain. The approved assembly was attended by 3 000 people according to the organiser and the Police counted 550 at the peak.[164] On 26 October 2019, hundreds of medical professionals gathered in a park in Central to protest against alleged police violence against protesters, and the arrest of medical professionals working in the frontline of the protests.[165]

Sunday 27 October 2019 – Rally in Tsim Sha Tsui

4.164 Around 15:00 on Sunday 27 October 2019, hundreds of protesters gathered at Salisbury Garden outside the Space Museum and the Cultural Centre in Tsim Sha Tsui to protest against police brutality and the spraying of blue-dyed water onto Kowloon Mosque in the dispersal operation on 20 October 2019. Prior to 27 October 2019, there were online messages appealing people to take part in the protest.[166] At the time of the event, police officers stood on guard at the location. Many protesters wore masks in defiance of the Anti-mask Law.



Image 4-74: A poster on LIHKG calling for participation in the protest on 27 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

---

164 Reuters (2019-10-24). Hong Kong pro-democracy protesters rally for Catalan separatists. Retrieved from https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-protests/hong-kong-pro-democracy-protesters-rally-for-catalan-separatists-idUSKBN1X308F

165 The New York Times (2019-10-27). Doctors and Nurses Criticize the Police. Retrieved from https://www.nytimes.com/2019/10/27/world/asia/hong-kong-protests.html

166 https://lihkg.com/thread/1674224/page/1

4.165 Around 15:40, clashes broke out between some violent protesters and the police officers there. News footage showed that the protesters hit some police officers with their umbrellas and the police officers fought back with batons. Shortly afterwards, the Police used pepper spray and tear gas to disperse the violent protesters. Some of protesters went into the Peninsula Hotel on Salisbury Road. [167]

4.166 Some protesters moved to Nathan Road towards Mong Kok and others left in the direction of Chatham Road. Again, along the way they vandalised MTR stations, shops and bank branches connected to the Mainland or the Fujianese community. They blocked roads and set fire at different locations. When they went to Sham Shui Po later in the evening, they also hurled petrol bombs at Sham Shui Po Police Station and Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices.[168] Mong Kok Police Station was as usual the target of attack. The Police deployed an SCMV to Tsim Sha Tsui and Mong Kong area to disperse the crowds. Around 19:00, violent protesters set up barricades at the junction of Argyle Street and Nathan Road, the usual battleground. Police officers fired tear gas and other less-lethal weapons for dispersal.[169]

4.167 In Mong Kok, a group of police officers were unable to defend themselves from the attack of some violent protesters. They had to retreat into an MTR station and closed the gate before firing tear gas from behind the iron grille to disperse the protesters pursuing them. In Yau Ma Tei, violent protesters attacked a man with hammers, believing that he was an undercover officer. The man sustained bleeding injuries on his head. In Hung Hom, a rubbish bin was hurled onto the railway track, disrupting the train service to Lo Wu.

4.168 On 27 October 2019, the Police fired 135 rounds of tear gas, 34 rubber rounds, 20 super sock rounds and six react rounds. 129 people were arrested on that day. The clashes in October 2019, in particular those on 1 October 2019, were the most violent compared with those in the preceding months. In October 2019, the Police fired a total of 2 848 rounds of tear gas, 1 625 rubber rounds, 386 super sock rounds, 350 react rounds and seven live rounds with two persons shot. The Police made a total of 1 189 arrests. However, these figures reflecting the severity of the clashes were all dwarfed by those in November 2019, the peak of the protest activities.

167 The New York Times (2019-10-27). Hong Kong Police Brawl With Protesters Outside Luxury Hotel. Retrieved from https://www.nytimes.com/2019/10/27/world/asia/hong-kong-protests.html

168 SCMP (2019-10-28). Hong Kong hit by violence and chaos as protests continue into 21st weekend. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3034750/hong-kong-police-fire-tear-gas-anti-government-protesters

169 Ming Pao Daily News (2019-10-28). 集會再變多區衝突 半關藥房中彈困 3 人 旺角密放催淚彈煙湧滿客巴士 Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20191028/s00001/1572200397100/集會再變多區衝突-半關藥房中彈困 3 人-旺角密放催淚彈-煙湧滿客巴士

Protests in November 2019:

November 2019

Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
					1	2 Clashes over Hong Kong Island and Kowloon Xinhua News Agency on fire
3	4 An HKUST student fell inside a carpark	5	6	7	8 Death of the HKUST student HKUST President issued an open letter requesting a thorough and independent investigation into the student's death	9
10 Territory wide violent actions	11 General Strike Territory wide violent actions Man chasing protesters who vandalised MTR station was set on fire Tolo Highway, East Rail Line (partial), and Cross Harbour Tunnel intermittently closed	12 General Strike CUHK clashes Territory wide violent actions Tolo Highway, and East Rail Line (partial) intermittently closed	13 General Strike CUHK clashes Territory wide violent actions Cleaner fatally hit by a brick thrown in the midst of clashes between people with opposing views Tolo Highway and East Rail Line (partial) closed, Cross Harbour Tunnel intermittently closed	14 General Strike Continued occupation of Bridge No.2 (CUHK) Territory wide violent actions Tolo Highway and East Rail Line, and Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	15 General Strike Continued occupation of Bridge No.2 (CUHK) Occupation of PolyU Territory wide violent actions Tolo Highway and East Rail Line, and Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	16 Tolo Highway reopened Occupation of PolyU East Rail Line (partial) and Cross Harbour Tunnel closed
17 PolyU clashes Territory wide violent actions East Rail Line (partial) and Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	18 PolyU clashes Territory wide violent actions Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	19 PolyU clashes Territory wide violent actions Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	20 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	21 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	22 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	23 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed
24 District Council Election Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	25 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	26 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	27 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	28 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel reopened	29 Siege of PolyU ended	30

Highlights of November 2019

- **Protests continued to escalate in violence. Lobby of Xinhua News Agency was set on fire, suspected explosives found in Causeway Bay and petrol bombs manufacturing centre uncovered.**
- **Doxxing of police officers and their family members intensified with criminal acts to cause nuisance and intimidation to the police officers and their families.**
- **A student from The Hong Kong University of Science and Technology (HKUST) falling to his death from a height gave protesters claims to escalate their violent protests.**
- **Violent protesters paralysed the entire city traffic network for five consecutive days to stop Hong Kong citizens from going to work and to schools so as to make them virtually participants in city-wide strikes.**
- **Violence continued to escalate, reaching a climax with the clashes at The Hong Kong Polytechnic University (PolyU) on 17 and 18 November, with the use of a record high number of police weapons and number of arrests.**
- **The Police fired eight live rounds, hitting one protester in Sai Wan Ho.**
- **A man chastising a group of masked protesters who had vandalised an MTR Station was set on fire.**
- **A 70-year old male cleaning worker was fatally hit in the head by a brick hurled from a group believed to be violent protesters in the midst of confrontation between the protesters and a group of local residents.**

4.169 November 2019 is the month with the most ferocious confrontation featuring the following major clashes:

- Protests on Hong Kong Island and in Kowloon on 2 November 2019;
- Territory-wide strikes and protests over five consecutive days from 11 to 15 November 2019, each day given a separate "action" name by the protesters;
- Violent clashes with hold-up at CUHK and in its vicinity over the Tolo Highway on 12 and 13 November 2019 coinciding with the territory-wide protests on these two days; and
- Violent clashes at PolyU and over the surrounding area on 17 and 18 November 2019.

4.170 The clashes outside CUHK and PolyU were war-like combat. Cross Harbour Tunnel outside PolyU, Tolo Highway outside CUHK and other major roads were blocked, effectively paralysing the traffic throughout Hong Kong.

4.171 In November 2019, the Police used a total of 9 597 rounds of tear gas (59.3% of the total), 7 479 rubber rounds (74.2% of the total), 1 425 super sock rounds (70.1% of the total), 1 104 react rounds (58.7% of the total), and eight live rounds (42.1% of the total), and arrested 2 899 persons (38.1% of the total). Figures for the clashes cited are given in the table below:

Date	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
	Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
2 Nov	409	132	20	18	263
11 Nov	659	251	55	78	309
12 Nov	2 330	1 770	434	159	167
13 Nov	736	593	54	34	220
14 Nov	177	56	11	9	64
15 Nov	121	18	0	4	17
17 Nov	1 530	1 344	172	279	142
18 Nov	3 293	3 188	667	499	1 071

Table 4-4: The use of police weapons and the number of arrests in major clashes in November 2019[170]

Saturday 2 November 2019 – Territory-wide Violent Protests

4.172 Starting from late October 2019, messages circulating on the internet called for "Punishing the Police by our means" if the Government did not set up an Independent Commission of Inquiry to investigate into alleged police brutality.

---

170 RTHK VNEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3

Secretary for Security replies to initial written qustions raised by Finance Committee Members in examining the Estimates of Expenditur 2020-21. Q2696. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr19-20/english/fc/fc/w_q/sb-e.pdf

https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749



Image 4-75: Calls for "Punishing the Police by our means" starting from 2 November 2019
(Image Source: LIHKG)

4.173 On 18 October 2019, a political activist applied for a LoNO to launch an assembly entitled "Fight for Autonomy; Stand with Hong Kong" at Victoria Park on 2 November 2019. The Police turned down this application but allowed two other assemblies to be held in Central the same day.[171] As a result, there was discussion on the internet about circumventing Police disapproval of the assembly at Victoria Park calling for people participating in "election meetings", which netizens claimed not requiring Police approval, at Victoria Park on 2 November 2019 and then joining the approved assemblies in Central.

[171] HK01 (2019-10-31). 逃犯條例-11-2-遮打-愛丁堡廣場集會-警發不反對通知書. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/392948/逃犯條例-11-2-遮打-愛丁堡廣場集會-警發不反對通知書



Image 4-76: Calls for participation in protests on 2 November 2019

(Image Source: LIHKG)



Image 4-77: Calls for participation in protests on 2 November 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-78: Calls for peaceful protesters to protect "valiant" ones on 2 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.174 In the afternoon of 2 November 2019, 128 pro-democracy District Council election candidates organised "election meetings" at Victoria Park to substitute the rally prohibited by the Police. Thousands of people gathered at Victoria Park and its vicinity. That afternoon, the Police found 188 petrol bombs in a flat in Wan Chai and arrested five persons.[172]

[172] 星島日報 (2019-11-03). 瘋火圍城 襲新華社 警破武器庫檢 188 汽油彈. Retrieved from https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2088768/日報-港聞-瘋火圍城-襲新華社-警破武器 庫檢 188 汽油彈

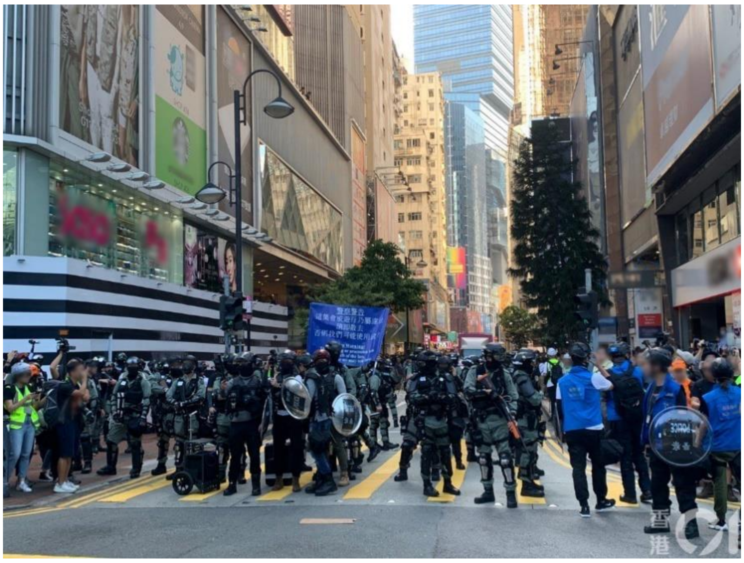


Image 4-79: Police showing "blue flag" at Great George Street on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.175 Some violent protesters blocked roads outside Victoria Park and set up barricades at an entrance to the Park. The Police fired tear gas to disperse the protesters.[173] The violent protesters left Victoria Park in the direction of Wan Chai. Along the way, they caused damages to their usual targets of MTR stations, shops and bank branches that were connected to the Mainland or the Fujianese community. They blocked roads, hurled petrol bombs and set fire at various locations. The Police used tear gas and deployed an SCMV for dispersal.[174]

173 RTHK (2019-11-02). Tear gas sends crowd racing through Victoria Park. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1489673-20191102.htm

174 HK01 (2019-11-02). [11.2 集會] 總覽 示威由日打到淩晨 警全日拘逾 200 人. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/393511/11-2 集會-總覽-示威由日打到淩晨-警全日拘逾 200 人

SCMP (2019-11-02). As it happened: how another Hong Kong weekend of violence ended in clashes in Mong Kok and Causeway Bay, with Xinhua office smashed. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3036040/tear-gas-pepper-spray-and-body-searches-protesters-and

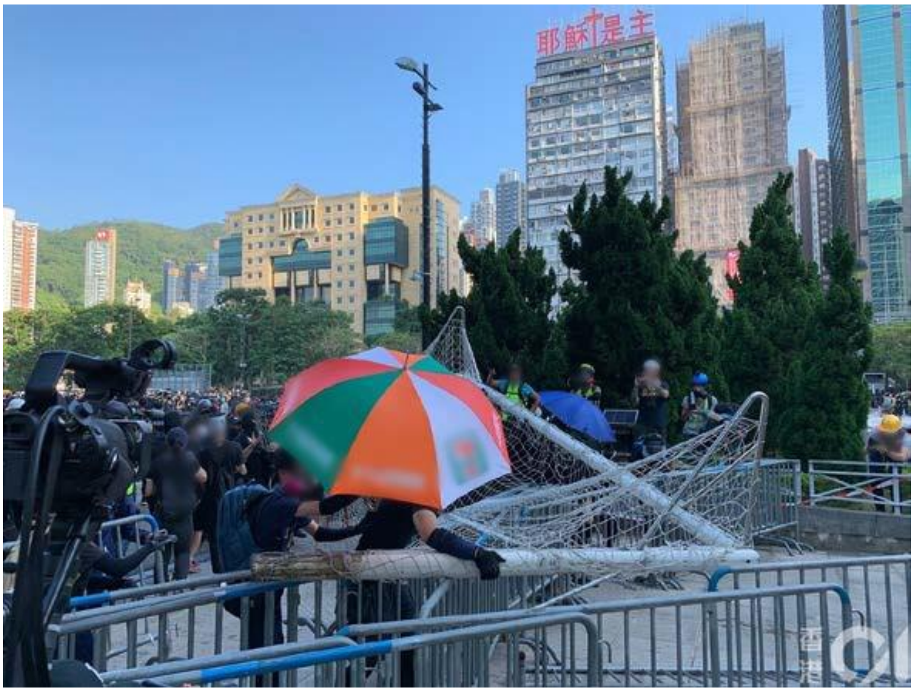


Image 4-80: Protesters set up barricades at an entrance to Victoria Park on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-81: Police firing tear gas into Victoria Park on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.176 In view of the breach of the peace in Causeway Bay and Wan Chai, the Police asked the organisers of the two approved assemblies in Central to conclude earlier and the participants to leave the venues.[175]

4.177 From the late afternoon till the evening, violent clashes took place at different locations from Causeway Bay to Sheung Wan. In addition to usual illegal acts to cause damages, they smashed the glass doors of the office of Xinhua News Agency in Wan Chai and set the lobby on fire. Suspected explosives were found in Causeway Bay and detonated by a bomb disposal robot.[176]



Image 4-82: Xinhua News Agency office in Wan Chai was attacked on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

175 HK01 (2019-11-02). [11.2 集會] 中環兩集會需腰斬 直擊示威者堵路車輛被困. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/393700/11-2 集會-中環兩集會需腰斬-直擊示威者堵路車輛被困

176 SCMP (2019-11-02). As it happened: how another Hong Kong weekend of violence ended inclashes in Mong Kok and Causeway Bay, with Xinhua office smashed. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3036040/tear-gas-pepper-spray-and-body-searches-protesters-and

HK01 (2019-11-02). [11.2 集會] 總覽 示威由日打到淩晨 警全日拘逾 200 人. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/393511/11-2 集會-總覽-示威由日打到淩晨-警全日拘逾 200 人



Image 4-83: An exit of Causeway Bay Station set on fire on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-84: A coffee shop in Sheung Wan was vandalised on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

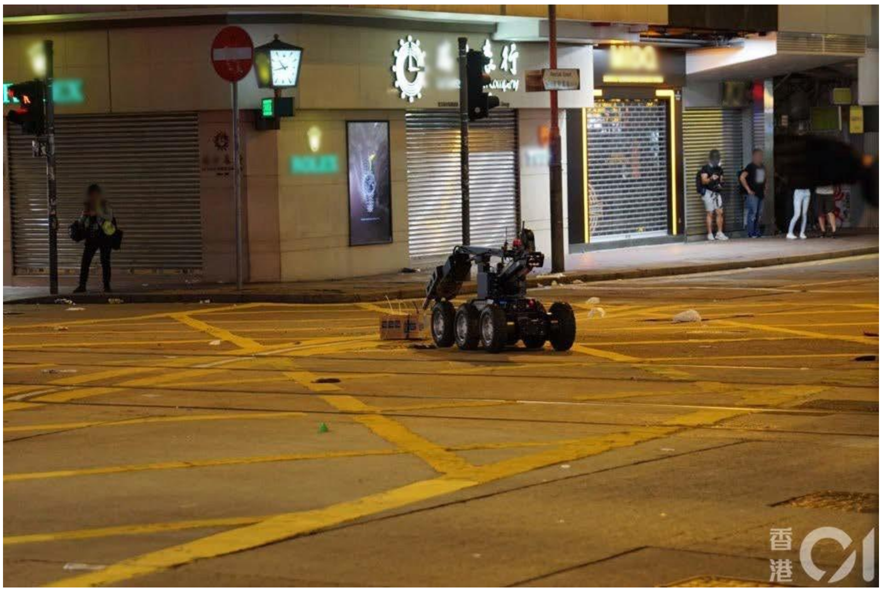


Image 4-85: A bomb disposal robot detonated suspected explosives in Causeway Bay on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.178 In Kowloon, some violent protesters blocked Nathan Road and hurled petrol bombs at police officers. The violent protesters set up road blocks and set fires along Nathan Road to Mong Kok where some of them beat a man for taking pictures of them. The Police dispersed them with tear gas and other less-lethal weapons. The violent clashes in Mong Kok continued into the small hours of 3 November 2019.[177] On 2 November 2019, the Police fired 409 rounds of tear gas, 132 rubber rounds, 20 super sock rounds, 18 react rounds, and arrested 262 persons.[178]

177 Ibid.

178 Information provided by HKPF

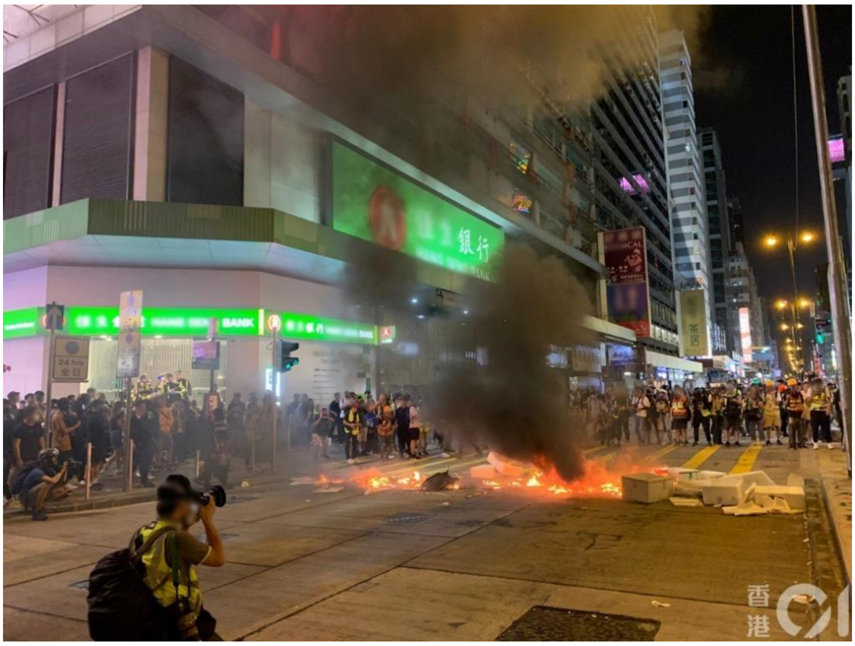


Image 4-86: Fire was seen on Nathan Road in Mong Kok on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

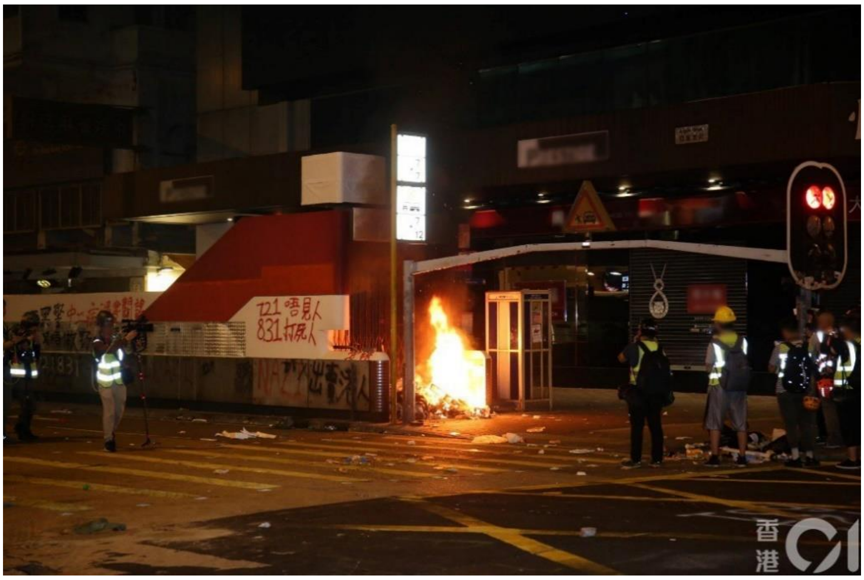


Image 4-87: Fire was seen at an exit of Mong Kok Station on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

Sunday 3 November- Friday 8 November 2019 – Protests Related to the Death of an HKUST Student

4.179 On 3 November 2019, "Street Wandering" protests were organised in seven districts throughout Hong Kong where violent clashes eventually took place. In Tai Koo, part of the ear of a pro-democracy District Councillor was bitten off during a scuffle between two parties with opposing views.[179]

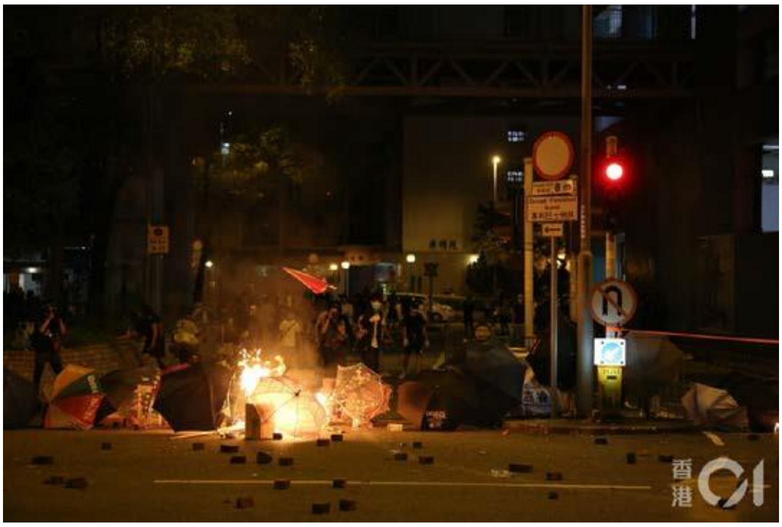


Image 4-88: Fire and obstacles were outside Kwong Ming Court on 3 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-89: The Police fired tear gas near Sheung Tak Estate on 3 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

179 HK01 (2019-11-03). [七區集會.總覽] 趙家賢被咬甩耳 太古夫婦捱斬 將軍澳夜戰. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/393828/七區集會-總覽-趙家賢被咬甩耳-太古夫婦捱斬-將軍澳夜戰

4.180 According to media reports, some protesters, by means of doxxing, knew a police officer's wedding banquet in Tseung Kwan O would be held on 3 November 2019. They called for people to make trouble at the event. That night, a crowd gathered near the banquet venue shouting and yelling to cause nuisance and police officers came to the scene. Subsequently, some violent protesters took to the streets in the vicinity, set up roadblocks and threw objects from a height. The Police fired tear gas to disperse them.[180] In the small hours of 4 November 2019, while police officers were clearing violent protesters from the streets, an HKUST student fell from the third to the second floor at a nearby carpark in Sheung Tak Estate, suffering fatal injuries. He died on 8 November 2019.[181]

4.181 On the internet, there were speculations about the cause of the student's death. Questions were raised about whether police officers were inside the carpark at that time, and whether any police officers were involved in the incident. The President of HKUST issued an open letter calling for an independent inquiry into the student's death, in particular the delay of 20 minutes in rescue as an ambulance had seemingly been blocked by police vehicles.[182] FSD confirmed that the ambulance sent to the incident spot was blocked by buses and private cars but not police vehicles.[183] The CCTV footage released by LINK to the public showing that no policeman was on the floor from which the HKUST student fell. The student's death is under Police investigation heading for a death inquiry.

---

[180] Oriental Daily (2019-11-04). 東方日報 A1:警婚宴遇激進示威 亂極生悲. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20191105/bkn-20191105033042108-1105_00822_001.html

HK01 (2019-11-08). [墮樓科大生] 周日警民衝突前因 警員辦婚禮 警曾入尚德停車場. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/396102/墮樓科大生-周日警民衝突前因-警員辦婚禮-警曾入尚德停車場

[181] Ming Pao (2019-11-08). 科大生周梓樂今晨不治-交死因庭跟進 _17:05). Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20191108/s00001/1573176989626/科大生周梓樂今晨不治-交死因庭跟進

[182] RTHK (2019-11-08). HKUST calls for independent probe into student death. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1490865-20191108.htm

[183] RTHK (2019-11-08). 消防處稱處理周梓樂個案時 救護員沒有與現場警員接觸. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1490828-20191108.htm





Image 4-90: Photo showing an ambulance blocked by the Police
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-91: Netizens opined that the Police delayed medical assistance for the HKUST student
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-92: Timeline of events provided by the Police
(Image source: HKPF)

4.182 The death incident further fuelled protesters' hatred for the Police. Protests were held on 8 November 2019 in various districts, calling for vengeance. That night, thousands of mourners came with flowers and origami to that carpark in memory of the student. Meanwhile, violent protesters began clashing with the Police in Causeway Bay, Yau Ma Tei, Mong Kok, Tuen Mun and other districts.[184] In Mong Kok, a police officer fired a warning shot to save himself from protesters ferociously attacking him and his colleagues with bricks.[185]



Image 4-93: A protester holding a "Blood for blood" sign in Central on 8 November 2019
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

4.183 Following the death incident, the protest slogan evolved from "Hongkongers, resist" to "香港人，報仇" (Translation: Hongkongers, take revenge).[186] On the internet, there were calls for a general strike on 11 November 2019.

---

[184] HK01 (2019-11-08). [悼念周梓樂.總覽] 油麻地警疑向天開一槍 警多區射催淚彈驅散. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/396192/悼念周梓樂-總覽-油麻地警疑向天開一槍-警多區射催淚彈驅散

[185] Information provided by HKPF

[186] Ibid.



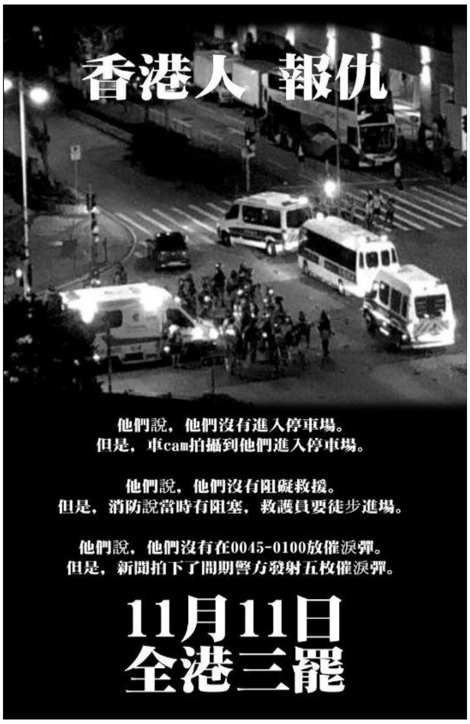


Image 4-94: "Hongkongers, take revenge" slogans on LIHKG
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-95: Internet message on 8 November 2019 calling for General Strike
(Image source: LIHKG)

Sunday 10 November 2019 – Clashes at Shopping Malls

4.184 On 10 November 2019, protesters gathered in various major shopping malls in Hong Kong including New Town Plaza in Sha Tin, and Festival Walk in Kowloon Tong, responding to online calls to "go shopping". Some violent protesters vandalised shops inside the malls, including those owned by Maxim's Caterers Limited. Clashes ensued when the Police took enforcement action inside the malls using batons, OC Foam[187] and pepper balls.[188] There were also clashes in Tsuen Wan, Tuen Mun, Mong Kok, Tai Po, Sheung Shui, Tin Shui Wai, and Tseung Kwan O.[189]

11-15 November 2019 – Territory-wide General Strikes

4.185 Violent protesters launched territory-wide general strikes between 11 and 15 November 2019, each day was given a title:[190]

- "黎明行動" (Dawn Action) on 11 November 2019;
- "破曉行動" (Daybreak Action) on 12 November 2019;
- "晨曦行動" (Dagian Action) on 13 November 2019;
- "曙光行動" (Twilight Action) on 14 November 2019; and
- "旭日行動" (Sunrise Action) on 15 November 2019.



Image 4-96: Calls for "Dawn Action" on 11 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

---

187 HKFP (2019-11-10). Hong Kong shopping mall protests descend into skirmishes with tear gas fired and multiple arrests made. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/11/10/hong-kong- shopping-mall-protests-descend-fresh-skirmishes-tear-gas-fired-multiple-arrests-made/

188 RTHK (2019-11-11). Midnight search at Festival Walk amid online rumours. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1491177-20191111.htm

189 HK01 (2019-11-10). [11.10 全日總覽] 又一城染血上水警舉槍 旺角警民衝突不息. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/396648/ 11-10 全日總覽-又一城染血-上水警舉槍-旺角警民衝突不息

190 LIHKG (2019-11-17). 有無可能聽朝罷三隧. Retrieved from https://lihkg.com/thread/1730229/page/1



Image 4-97: Calls for continued protests on 12 and 13 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-98: Calls for continued protests on 14 and 15 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.186 The violent protesters adopted urban guerrilla tactics, aiming at paralysing the traffic networks in the entire city by blocking major roads and disrupting MTR services. There were online posts appealing to "peaceful protesters" to participate in the disruptive activities by way of dropping objects on the roads and the railways, crossing roads in a snail pace and taking out Octopus cards slowly to create congestion at the ticket gates of MTR stations.



Image 4-99: Suggestions on how to participate in the protests
(Image source: LIHKG)

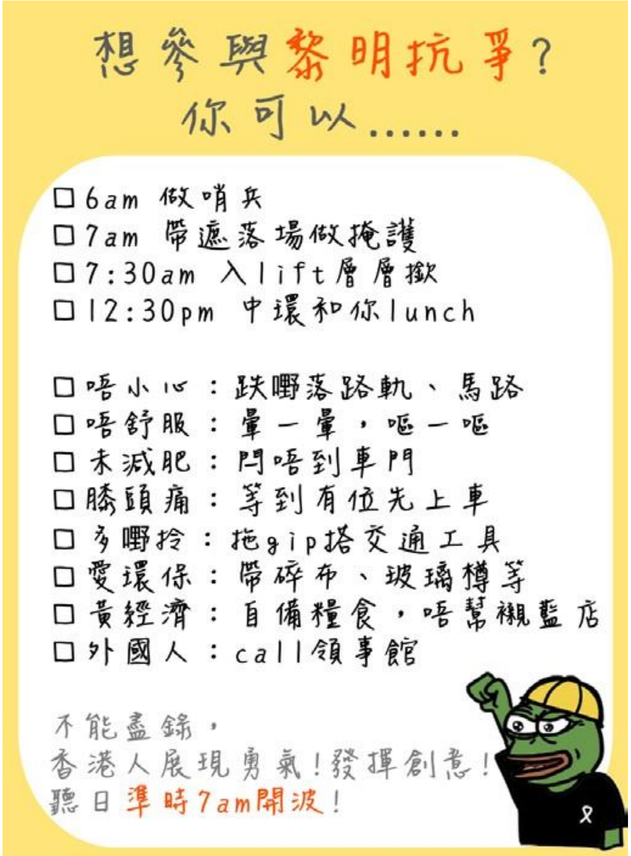


Image 4-100: Suggestions on how to participate in the protests
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.187 There were also posts giving advice how to make iron nails and install them on roads so as to puncture tyres on moving vehicles.

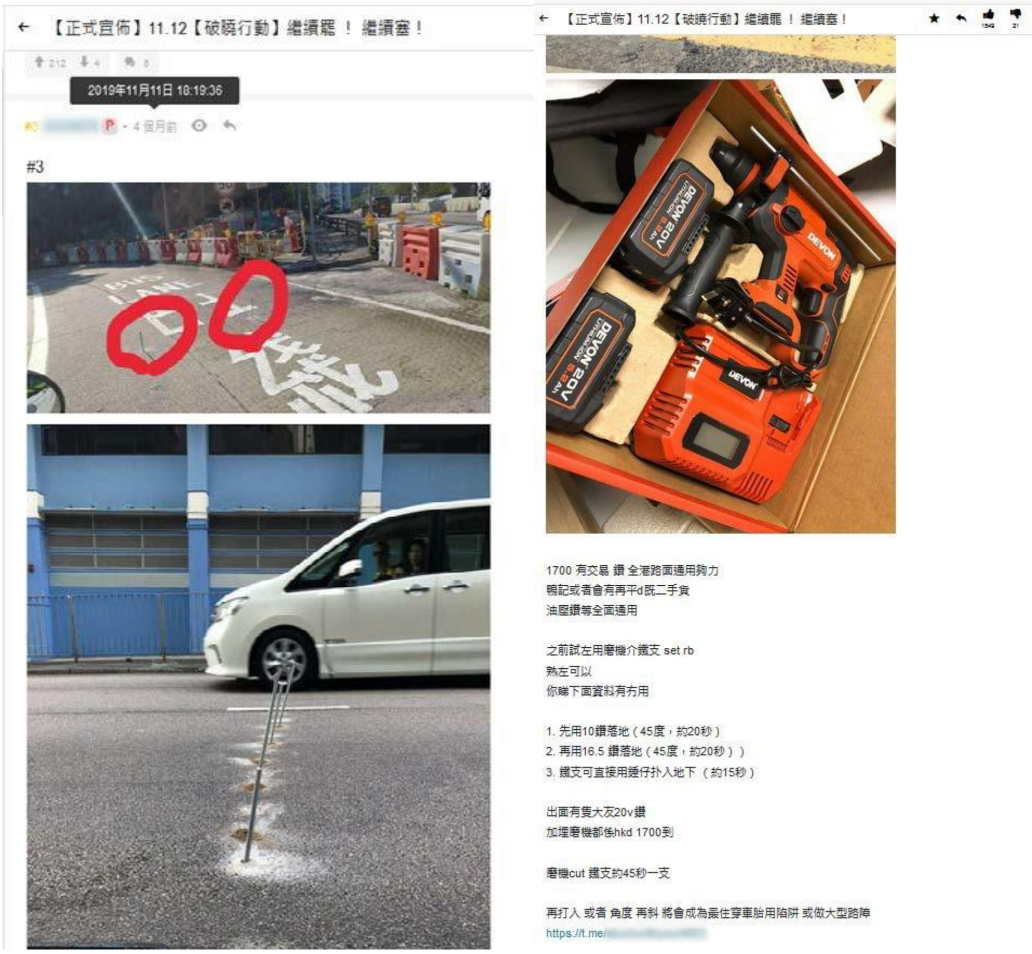


Image 4-101: How to install iron rods on roads
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-102: How to make iron nails
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.188 Early each morning from 11 to 15 November 2019, violent protesters set up barricades on the roads, one after another, to disrupt traffic in all 18 districts in Hong Kong. Tolo Highway running past CUHK, Waterloo Road, Junction Road and Cornwall Street in the vicinity of HKBU and City University of Hong Kong (CityU), Pokfulam Road by the side of The University of Hong Kong (HKU), Nathan Road and Kings Road were blocked intermittently between 11 and 16 November 2019. Train service between Fo Tan and Tai Po Market Station on the MTR East Rail Line was suspended from 13 to 16 November 2019 due to damage to rail facilities.[191] Cross Harbour Tunnel by the side of PolyU was closed intermittently from 11 to 13 November 2019 and then for two straight weeks from 14 to 27 November 2019 due to damage to the toll booths, which had been set ablaze by violent protesters.[192] The University Station next to CUHK was reopened only on 21 December

---

191 HKEJ (2019-11-17). 東鐵線火炭站至大埔墟站路段週一重開. Retrieved from https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2306157/東鐵線火炭站至大埔墟站路段週一重開

192 RTHK (2019-11-26). Cross-Harbour Tunnel to reopen on Wednesday. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1494542-20191126.htm

2019.[193] At MTR stations, violent protesters stood at train doors to keep them from closing so that the train could not leave the MTR station. As a result, rail service of the entire MTR line was disrupted. They also blocked MTR exits and ticket gates to prevent people from using the MTR stations. Owing to the traffic disruption, many could not go to work or took a very long time to go to their workplaces.[194] All classes at kindergartens, primary schools and secondary schools were suspended from 14 to 19 November 2019.[195]

---

193 RTHK (2019-12-21). 港鐵東鐵綫大學站重開　有中大學生稱方便很多. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1498916-20191221.htm

194 HK01 (2019-11-11). [11.11 三罷] 警員西灣河開真槍屯門示威者架駛巴士堵路. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/396823/11-11三罷-警員西灣河開真槍-屯門示威者架駛巴士堵路

HK01 (2019-11-11). [11.11 港九總覽] 旺角示威者火燒太興中銀 再毀翠華茶餐廳. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/396895/11-11-港九總覽-旺角示威者火燒太興中銀-再毀翠華茶餐廳

HK01 (2019-11-11). [11.11 三罷.總覽] 屯門防暴射催淚彈截車檢汽油彈拘多人. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/396898/11-11三罷-總覽-屯門防暴射催淚彈-截車檢汽油彈拘多人

HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.港九總覽] 催淚煙與汽油彈不息 衝突升級前景不明. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397178/11-12-港九總覽-催淚煙與汽油彈-不息-衝突升級前景不明

HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.新界總覽] 中大戰況激烈多人傷多區烽煙四起. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/397155/1 11-12-新界總覽-中大戰況激烈多人傷-多區烽煙四起

HK01 (2019-11-13). [11.13.港九全日總覽] 警與示威者旺角警署外對峙對戰至深夜. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397616/11-13-港九全日總覽-警與示威者旺角警署外對峙-對戰至深夜

HK01 (2019-11-13). [11.13.新界全日總覽] 示威者元朗破壞輕鐵軌 商店 防暴到場. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/18%E5%8D%80%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397614/ 11-13-新界全日總覽-示威者元朗破壞輕鐵軌-商店-防暴到場

HK01 (2019-11-14). [11.14.港九全日總覽] 紅隧收費亭多次被焚 旺角對峙不斷. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/398006/11-14-港九全日總覽-紅隧收費亭多次被焚-旺角對峙不斷

HK01 (2019-11-14). [11.14.新界總覽] 警多區射催淚彈 嶺大兩外籍交換生被捕. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/398003/11-14-新界總覽-警多區射催淚彈-嶺大兩外籍交換生被捕

HK01 (2019-11-15). [11.1.港九總覽] 早上大學區堵路火燒路軌晚上旺角現火蘑菇雲. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/398474/11-15港九總覽-早上大學區堵路火燒路軌-晚上旺角現火蘑菇雲

HK01 (2019-11-15). [11.15.新界總覽] 防暴上水施放催淚彈 中大疑儲汽油彈車爆炸. Retrieved from. https://www.hk01.com/18%E5%8D%80%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/398456/ 11-15-新界總覽-防暴上水施放催淚彈-中大疑儲汽油彈車爆炸

HK01 (2019-11-16). [11.16.港九總覽] 解放軍浸大外清磚 晚間理大催淚彈汽油彈橫飛. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/398936/11-16港九總覽-解放軍浸大外清磚-晚間理大催淚彈汽油彈橫飛

195 Ming Pao (2019-11-19). 網民再號召堵路阻明復課-教育局籲勿擾亂上學秩序 (17:34). Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/ins/%E6%B8%AF%E8%81%9E/article/20191119/s00001/1574140705191/網民再號召堵路阻明復課-教育局籲勿擾亂上學秩序

4.189 In the morning of 11 November 2019, as a traffic police officer cleared objects from a road junction in Sai Wan Ho, several violent protesters confronted him. In the struggle that ensued, the traffic police officer fired three live rounds, one of which hit one of the violent protesters.[196] That injured violent protester was subsequently arrested. On the same day, in Kwai Fong, a police officer riding a police motorcycle charged into a crowd of protesters in a zig-zag manner. The officer was suspended from frontline duties and took leave instantly following the incident.[197]



Image 4-103: Roadblocks were set up on Tuen Mun Road
(Image source: HK01)

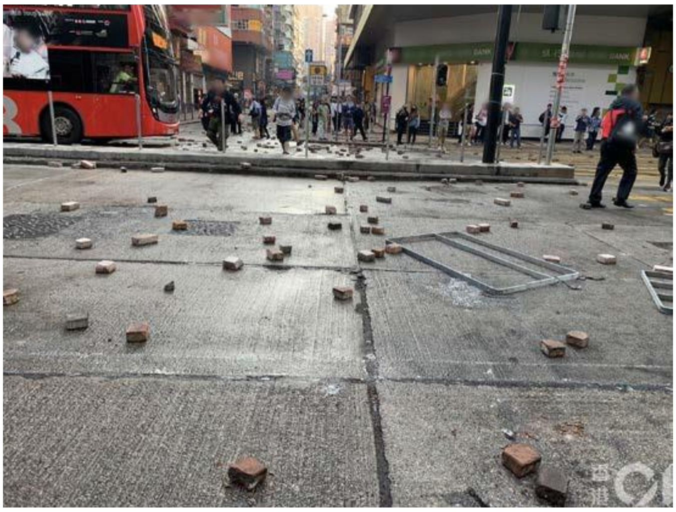


Image 4-104: Roadblocks were set up on Nathan Road
(Image source: HK01)

---

196 SCMP (2019-11-12). Hong Kong protests: shot student remains in critical condition after surgery to remove right kidney, part of liver and bullets, as arguments raised over force used. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3037265/hong-kong-protests-shot-student-remains-critical

197 News.gov.hk (2019-11-11). Police probe motorbike incident. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/eng/2019/11/20191111/20191111_164223_362.html?type=ticker

HKFP (2019-11-11). Hong Kong police suspend motorcycle officer who drove into protesters. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/11/11/hong-kong-police-suspend-motorcycle-officer-drove-protesters/



Image 4-105: Roadblocks were set up on Cheung Sha Wan Road
(Image source: HK01)

4.190 People affected by or objecting to the unruly behaviours of the protesters disputed with them and urging them not to block roads and train doors. At times, the disputes turned violent. On 11 November 2019, a violent protester poured gasoline on a man and set him on fire after he chastised a group of maskedprotesters vandalising Ma On Shan MTR Station. The man suffered second degree burns on 28% of his body.[198] On 13 November 2019, a 70-year old cleaning worker was hit on the head by a brick hurled from a group believed to be violent protesters in the midst of a confrontation between the violent protesters and a group of local residents. The man died on 14 November 2019.[199]

4.191 While general strikes were taking place, some protesters began to occupy the campuses of HKU, CUHK, PolyU, CityU and HKBU, blocking the major roads in their vicinity. The occupation of CUHK on 12 and 13 November 2019 and PolyU on 17 and 18 November 2019 saw the most violent clashes between protesters and the Police. On the internet, netizens' opinion differed whether the protesters should hold fort at university campuses. Some championed geographically strategic locations of some of the campuses, some considered occupying universities to have symbolic significance, while others thought urban guerrilla tactics to be more effective.

198 SCMP (2019-11-11). Hong Kong father of two 'burned alive' after chasing protesters at MTR station in grisly act of violence police classify as attempted murder. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3037243/hong-kong-father-two-burned-alive-after-chasing

199 SCMP (2019-11-15). Hong Kong protests: police treat death of 70-year-old cleaner as murder, saying he was struck by brick thrown with malice. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3037927/hong-kong-protests-police-treat-death-70-year-old-cleaner

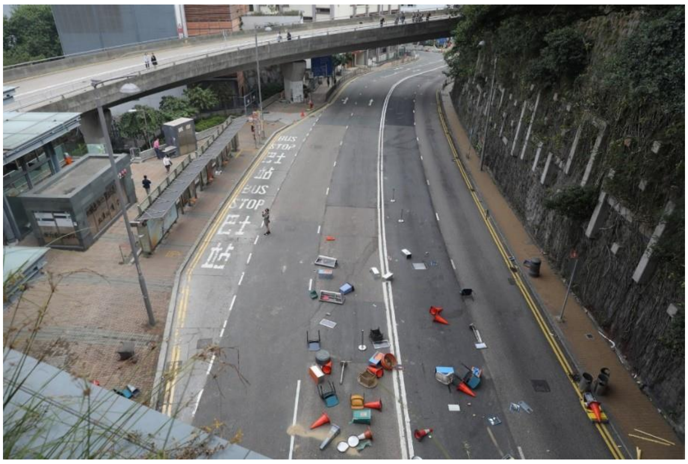


Image 4-106: Pokfulam Road outside HKU was blocked
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-107: Cornwall Street outside residential halls of CityU was blocked
(Image source: HK01)

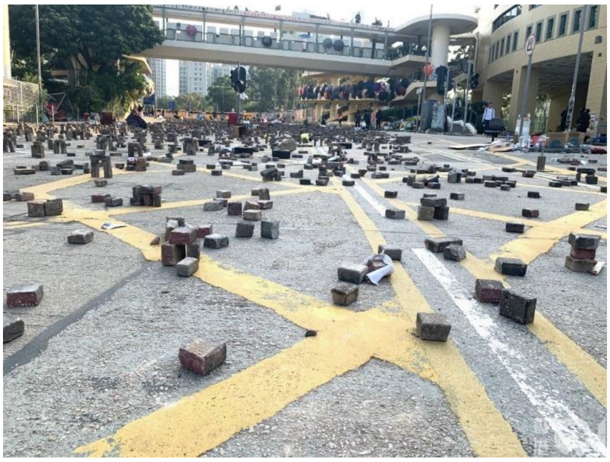


Image 4-108: Junction Road outside HKBU was blocked.
(Image source: HK01)



中大係一擺定要守！！！！！！！

1959 19

第 1 頁

下一頁

2019年11月11日 16:12:46

#1 · 4 個月前

班狗已經入左打仗mode，而暴大就係一個非常重要既據點！！！

1. 全港最叻，最有heart既學生係曬暴大，可以**一網打盡**

2. 雖然運動無大台，但暴大作為一大，唔多唔少都有啲精神領導

好多有象徵義意既野都係暴大開始先（例如民主女神，四院會師，武術班）

暴大淪陷，**士氣必定銳減**！！

其他u既手足一定會好撚驚，top u 都淪陷，其他u既校長仲要無出過聲

同樣道理都適用於狗身上，最top既暴大佢地都搞得掂，其他u既手足肯定手指尾都捽得死！

小妹不才，無戰略知識又無體能，但真係懇請大家快啲集人，大埔火炭佢大馬鞍山邊到都好

一齊入暴大同啲甲由死過，或者用其他方法，引走啲甲由！！

1959 19



［求共識］八大邊間要守 邊間唔守

2019年11月14日 13:35:03

#101 · 4 個月前

Poly 中大一定要守，因為停左紅隧同吐露港

1 0 1

#102 ：推

#103 · 4 個月前

中大,理大,浸大

佔據住香港重要幹道

推到睇到啊

1 0

戰略建議 - 各大學戰略定位

14 0

第 1 頁

2019年11月14日 21:00:59

#1 • 4 個月前

守大學等於和理塞，唔需要撤，但要做好長期準備。
中大：東鐵+吐露港公路
理大：紅隧
城大、浸大：窩打老道+歌和老街+達之路
港大：薄扶林道+般咸道

建議大約係咁

敵方策略：圍而不攻，牽制兵馬
我方對應策略：
1. 只留哨兵，輪流值班，輪番入HALL休息，養足精神
2. 維持穩定、安全補給線，市民可以運物資支援
3. 清洗TG殘留物，特別係中大，要用番梘洗地，盡量唔好瞓地，返HALL瞓，如果唔係慢性毒死

得閒咪研究下武器，保持心境開朗，唔好太繃緊！

14 0

其實暴大做咩變左佔領2.0

3164 408

第 1 頁　　下一頁

2019年11月14日 19:48:59

#1 • 4 個月前

喺崇基書院個CANTEEN見到個環境都幾撚差下，忍唔住想分享幾句

1. 長期死守 ＝ 我地消耗大過人地N倍
- 一開頭D狗霸2號橋，我地笑9佢地罰企，企足全晚，過左星期二晚一役兩邊角色掉轉左，我地訓地下食乾糧佢地嘆冷氣慢慢睇我地死守

2. 人地唔係真係驚你D「路障」，係驚你地決心大
- 狗前日攻打暴大之後收手，係因為你人多氣勢如虹，日間拉左五個手足其餘都仲唔讓，子彈都唔驚，然後佢愈強攻，D人包括社會上有名嘅校友愈同情，佢壓力愈大
- 亦即係裝備精良嘅狗其實唔怕D「路障」，咩山頭易守難攻其實唔算有決定性影響，人數同決心先最緊要，而家打退左狗，搞佔領喺度煲水煮飯做運動根本投入大回報少

3. 大學有戰略價值但係唔係無左佢會死
- 好多人覺得校園好撚多資源可以用，但其實打左五個月大家最重視係唔係有個地方可以俾你露天坐低調酒？！之前咪一樣係咁打，你霸左個山頭係咪有大貨車有系統地穿過D狗RB送野出去用？而家根本最缺唔係物資，上水天水圍中環POLY打到仆街大家就坐晒喺山頭踩單車將D野搬完去A又喺A搬番去B，整一D限制自己行動力嘅野(e.g. 有無諗過大門果幾幅牆除左用黎擋子彈仲可以擋埋大家視線，D狗要衝一架狗車推冧晒加成班走唔切）

4. 自己在明對手在暗，死霸一個根據點令自己精神長時間繃緊
- 本來區區開花D狗淨係搵人都已經無左半條血，而家長期有個位擺明俾人睇邊度有示威者，入面守嘅仲要係咁就緒隨時有人打過來，一搞佔領就好撚似兩傘咁，守與不守，點守，個個好似隨時開拖咁，我有咩都唔撚敢同你當面講

所以有人講話而家個校園好多TG殘餘物好毒，未洗去討論毒唔毒，本身已經無必要死守，
搞到佔領區2.0咁，又要搞咩討論，又要煮飯食飯，又要渣校巴車人，你日日做呢D野嘅同時D狗毫
為咩？如果D狗一路唔攻，俾你佔晒成個十一月你估入面嘅手足會唔會守撚到內鬥鬥撚死自己

Image 4-109: Netizens discussed the occupation of university campuses
(Image source: LIHKG)

12 - 13 November 2019 – Violent Clashes at CUHK

4.192 Starting from 11 November 2019, violent protesters at CUHK blocked Tai Po Road outside CUHK and threw objects from Bridge No. 2, which spanned over Tolo Highway to the Science Park, and the East Rail Line railroad track, to block the two major traffic lines. The violent protesters also put objects on Bridge No. 2 to stop the Police from advancing into CUHK. They hurled bricks and petrol bombs at police officers when the latter attempted to clear the objects that blocked Tolo Highway and the East Rail Line. The Police fired tear gas and other less-lethal weapons in attempts to get into CUHK and to disperse the protesters. It was the first time the Police fired tear gas into university campuses.[200]

4.193 There was a long standoff at Bridge No. 2 interspersed with sporadic clashes. The atmosphere intensified in the evening after various failed attempts by university management to mediate between the protesters and the Police.[201]



Image 4-110: Protester blocking Tai Po Road outside CUHK
(Image source: HK01)

200 SCMP (2019-11-11). Tear gas fired on campuses for first time as student protesters battle police at Chinese University, Polytechnic University and University of Hong Kong. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3037262/tear-gas-fired-campuses-first-time-student-protesters

201 HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.新界總覽] 中大戰況激烈多人傷多區烽煙四起. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/397155/ 11-12-新界總覽-中大戰況激烈多人傷-多區烽煙四起



Image 4-111: Bricks, barricades, fire and tear gas were seen at CUHK
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-112: A protester hurled at petrol bomb at Police cordon line on Bridge No. 2
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-113: Clashes on Bridge No. 2
(Image source: HK01)

4.194 At 22:00, the Police deployed an SCMV, but the violent protesters threw petrol bombs to stop the SCMV from advancing. After a while, the Police retreated from the campus to the far end of Bridge No. 2 in order not to escalate the situation.[202]

4.195 The violent clashes at CUHK attracted widespread public attention. On the internet, there were calls for people to protect CUHK, provide supplies to the protesters there, and send cars to take protesters away. To divert Police attention and resources from CUHK, some internet messages asked people to create conflicts in other districts, particularly in Tai Po and Sha Tin, by blocking roads, vandalising shopping malls and public infrastructure, and attacking police stations. At 20:00 on 12 November 2019, violent protesters broke into Festival Walk in Kowloon Tong and caused massive damage to the shopping mall for six hours, shattering all the glass panels on the railings and main entrances and burning down a Christmas tree four-storey high. There were also violent clashes in many districts, including Causeway Bay, Central, Kowloon Tong, Mong Kok, Sai Wan Ho, Tai Po, Tin Shui Wai, Tseung Kwan O and Tuen Mun, throughout Hong Kong.[203]

---

[202] HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.新界總覽] 中大戰況激烈多人傷多區烽煙四起. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/397155/ 11-12-新界總覽-中大戰況激烈多人傷-多區烽煙四起

[203] HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.港九總覽] 催淚煙與汽油彈不息 衝突升級前景不明. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397178/11-12-港九總覽-催淚煙與汽油彈-不息-衝突升級前景不明

HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.新界總覽] 中大戰況激烈多人傷多區烽煙四起. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/397155/ 11-12-新界總覽-中大戰況激烈多人傷-多區烽煙四起

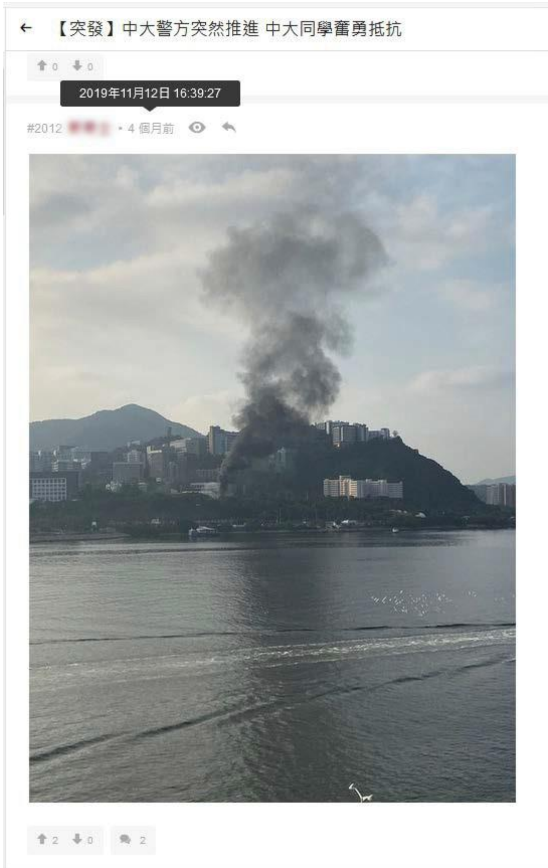


Image 4-114: Picture showing heavy smoke emitting from CUHK in a discussion thread stating that CUHK students valiantly resisting the Police

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-115: Calls for supplies relating to the petrol bombs

(Image source: LIHKG)

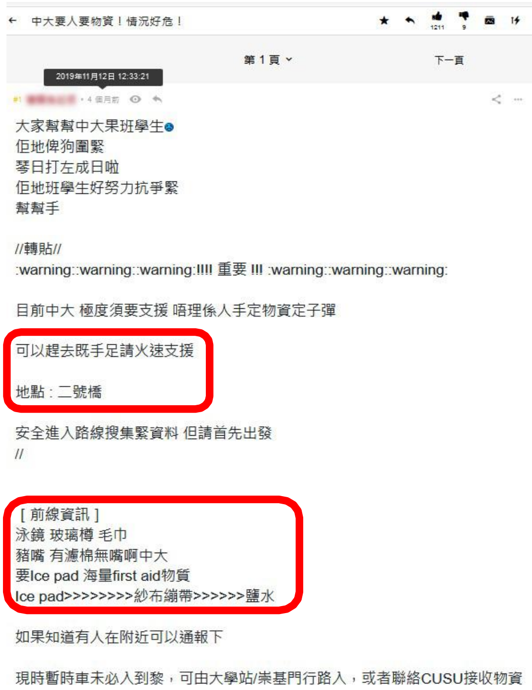




Image 4-116: Calls for supplies to help CUHK students
(Image source: LIHKG)





Image 4-117: Calls for diverting Police attention

(Image source: LIHKG)

4.196 On the 13 and 14 November 2019, the violent protesters continued to occupy CUHK, especially Bridge No. 2, and set up barricades with bricks, large rubbish bins, tables and chairs at the major entrances of the university.[204] At 03:00 on 15 November 2019, three masked protesters at CUHK held a press conference indicating their intention to reopen one lane in each direction of the Tolo Highway as a gesture of good faith. They demanded that the Government hold the 2019 Hong Kong District Council elections as scheduled on 24 November 2019, release all the people arrested in the protests and establish an Independent Commission of Inquiry within 24 hours.[205] Nevertheless, CUHK Students' Union questioned the plan to open Tolo Highway although they respected the wishes of "the frontline protesters".[206] Protesters gradually left CUHK campus in the evening of 15 November 2019. Tolo Highway was reopened at noon on 16 November 2019.

4.197 On 15 November 2019, the Vice-Chancellor of CUHK issued a statement suggesting that many of the masked protesters were not CUHK students. He said that the masked protesters had set fires in the campus, removed bricks from pavements, stole vehicles, broke into academic buildings and hostels, and damaged many university facilities. These people also had brought into CUHK materials and supplies from outside to assemble a large number of petrol bombs. Some CUHK laboratories had been broken into, and various hazardous and highly inflammable chemicals had been found missing. He regretted that the university had become a base for illegal activities that threatened public safety.[207] According to a media report, more than 8 000 petrol bombs were found inside CUHK.[208]

---

204 Apple Daily (2019-11-15). 【中大保衛戰】設「入境處」防警臥底混入校園 抗爭者：一方有難 八方支持. Retrieved from https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/20191115/7S4OKU47TCQTKPTSV364WDX7SY/

205 HK01 (2019-11-15). 【11.15 中大】示威者重開部分吐露港公路　要求 24 小時內回應訴求. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/398465/11-15 中大-示威者重開部分吐露港公路-要求 24 小時內回應訴求

206 RTHK (2019-11-15). 中大學生會：從未知悉及同意前線示者對區選行動訴求. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1492304-20191115.htm?archive_date=2019-11-15

207 CUHK (2019-11-15). CUHK Vice Chancellor and President Professor Rocky S. Tuan's Open Letter. Retrieved from https://www.cpr.cuhk.edu.hk/en/press_detail.php?id=3169&t=cuhk-vice-%20chancellor-and-president-professor-rocky-s-tuan-s-open-letter&s=

208 SCMP (2019-11-18). Dangerous chemicals missing from laboratories of Hong Kong's universities could threaten public safety, officials and experts warn after campus clashes. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038300/dangerous-chemicals-missing-laboratories-hong-kongs

SCMP (2019-11-19). More than 8,000 petrol bombs primed for Hong Kong streets 'found in weapons factory at Chinese University'. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038399/thousands-petrol-bombs-primed-hong-kong-streets-found

4.198 The figures on the weapons used and the arrests made by the Police on 12 and 13 November 2019 are given in the following table.

Date	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
	Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
12 Nov	2 330	1 770	434	159	167
13 Nov	736	593	54	34	220

Table 4-5: The use of police weapons and the number of arrests in major clashes on 12 and 13 November 2019[209]

17 - 29 November 2019 – Violent Clashes outside PolyU and Aftermath

4.199 On 12 November 2019, the second day of the five-day General Strike, violent protesters dropped different objects from the footbridge above the toll booths of the Cross Harbour Tunnel to block the entrance of the tunnel. The Police used tear gas for dispersal.[210]

4.200 On 13 November 2019, some violent protesters started to occupy PolyU. PolyU management urged all staff and students not to return to the university. That late evening, some violent protesters threw petrol bombs at some of toll booths of the tunnel to set them on fire. The tension at PolyU started building up from 13 November 2019 onwards with intermittent clashes between the violent protesters occupying PolyU and the Police during dispersal action, culminating in the violent clashes on 17 and 18 November 2019.[211]

4.201 As the situation at CUHK began to ease off, the violent protesters at PolyU set up barricades to block all accesses to PolyU in order to hold fort there. They put a large quantity of miscellaneous objects on the footbridges connecting to Hung Hom Station and Tsim Sha Tsui East, the flyover going to the Hong Kong Coliseum and the area surrounding PolyU to block access to the campus. At each of the barricades, they put up a wall of opened umbrellas to block the Police from viewing of their action behind the umbrellas and to shield themselves from projectiles fired by the Police and water discharged by SCMV. At the road junction of Chatham Road and Austin Road, later one of the major battlefields between the violent protesters and the Police, they scattered bricks, rocks and other objects over a large area to

209 RTHK VNEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3

210 HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.港九總覽] 催淚煙與汽油彈不息 衝突升級前景不明. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397178/11-12-港九總覽-催淚煙與汽油彈-不息-衝突升級前景不明

211 HK01 (2019-11-13). [11.13.港九全日總覽] 警與示威者旺角警署外對峙對戰至深夜. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397616/11-13-港九全日總覽-警與示威者旺角警署外對峙-對戰至深夜

HK01 (2019-11-14). [11.14.理大] 防暴警今早校園放催淚彈 警:箭從理大射出. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/398013/11-14-理大-防暴警今早校園放催淚彈-警-箭從理大射出

HK01 (2019-11-16). [11.16 理大] 校外晚上催淚彈汽油彈橫飛 校方指化學品被盜報警. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399141/ 11-16 理大-校外晚上催淚彈汽油彈橫飛-校方指化學品被盜報警

obstruct police vehicles and police officers from approaching PolyU from that direction. They threw bricks at innocent citizens who tried to remove the objects from the junction to the pavement. Violent protesters equipped with bows and arrows, wooden poles, sling shots and petrol bombs stood guard at various vantage points on the edge of PolyU, ready to tackle the Police. Some violent protesters practised hurling petrol bombs at the swimming pool of the university while others produced petrol bombs inside the campus. Yet others took chemicals from the laboratories to make weapons.[212]

4.202 On 17 and 18 November 2019, the Police attempted to get into PolyU via the junction of Chatham Road South and Austin Road and the flyover connecting Hong Kong Coliseum but were met with brutal resistance from the violent protesters who threw petrol bombs, bricks and other objects at the advancing police officers.[213] The violent protesters also used large sling shots and catapults to launch petrol bombs and hard objects at police officers. The Police fired multiple rounds of tear gas and less-lethal weapons and deployed armoured vehicles and SCMVs to discharge water at the violent protesters behind the barricades and the wall of opened umbrellas. Innumerable petrol bombs and bricks were hurled by the violent protesters and numerous rounds of tear gas and other projectile rounds were fired by the Police. A police armoured vehicle was hit by petrol bombs and caught fire when it tried to advance on the flyover from the direction of Hong Kong Coliseum. So did an SCMV and another armoured vehicle at the junction of Chatham Road South. Fires were everywhere. The whole place was literally a horrifying battlefield. The scenes were disturbing and saddening. A police officer responsible for media liaison work was shot outside PolyU in his left calf by an arrow which almost went right through the muscle with the tip of the arrow bulging out on the other end under the skin.[214]

---

212 HK01 (2019-11-14). [11.14.理大] 防暴警今早校園放催淚彈 警:箭從理大射出. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/398013/11-14-理大-防暴警今早校園放催淚彈-警-箭從理大射出

Oriental Daily (2019-11-15). 修例風波：理工泳池淪練靶場 黑衣人樂玩掟汽油彈. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20191115/bkn-20191115093321790- 1115_00822_001.html?refer=hn2

HK01 (2019-11-16). [11.16 理大] 校外晚上催淚彈汽油彈橫飛 校方指化學品被盜報警. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399141/ 11-16理大-校外晚上催淚彈汽油彈橫飛-校方指化學品被盜報警

HK01 (2019-11-17). [11.17.理大] 實驗室被擅闖搜掠 記者直擊一地化學品. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/399336/ 11-17-理大實驗室被擅闖搜掠-記者直擊一地化學品

213 China Daily DOCS (2020-02-25). Battleground PolyU. Retrieved from https://www.youtube.com/watch?time_continue=520&v=Nl7fA8pL0l8&feature=emb_title

214 SCMP (2019-11-17). As it happened: live round fired near army barracks in Hong Kong as police warned of mass arrests of anti-government radicals. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038096/hong-kong-officer-shot-arrow- police-deploy-water-cannons

SCMP (2019-11-18). Polytechnic University war zone: how Hong Kong radicals got boxed in by police after two days of ferocious clashes. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong- kong/law-and-crime/article/3038308/polytechnic-university-war-zone-how-hong-kong-radicals

RTHK (2019-11-17). Police officer shot in leg with arrow. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1492745-20191117.htm

HK01 (2019-11-17). [11.17.港九總覽] 理大火後一片狼藉 旺角大量防暴巡邏. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399155/11-17港九總覽-理大火後一片狼藉-旺角大量防暴巡邏

4.203 Similar to the clashes at CUHK, protesters began to adopt urban guerrilla tactics with a view to diverting police attention from PolyU and stretching police resources in order to rescue the protesters in PolyU. On 17 and 18 November 2019, violent clashes broke out in areas near PolyU, including Hung Hom, Tsim Sha Tsui, Jordan, Yau Ma Tei, and Mong Kok.[215] The Police fired four live rounds over these two nights. At about 21:49 on 17 November 2019, a private vehicle was driven towards a uniformed officer whilst he was forming a police cordon line at Austin Road, Tsim Sha Tsui. In order to protect that officer, another officer fired one shot at the driver. The shot hit the windscreen of the vehicle but missed the driver. The vehicle did not stop. In the small hours of 18 November 2019 on Nathan Road in Jordan, whilst a group of officers were escorting a female arrested person to an ambulance, some violent protesters ferociously threw hard objects at them. An officer fired two warning shots to protect themselves. As the protesters further attacked officers with petrol bombs, the officer fired a third round at the protesters. The three live rounds did not hit any protester.[216]

HK01 (2019-11-18). [11.18.港九全日總覽] 張達明曾鈺成陪理大學生離開 局勢稍緩. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399364/ 11-18 港九全日總覽-張達明-曾鈺成陪理大學生離開-局勢稍緩

215 HK01 (2019-11-17). [11.17.港九總覽] 理大火後一片狼藉 旺角大量防暴巡邏. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399155/ 11-17港九總覽-理大火後一片狼藉-旺角大量防暴巡邏

HK01 (2019-11-18). [11.18.港九全日總覽] 張達明曾鈺成陪理大學生離開 局勢稍緩. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399364/ 11-18 港九全日總覽-張達明-曾鈺成陪理大學生離開-局勢稍緩

216 Information provided by HKPF.

4.204 After multiple unsuccessful attempts to disperse the violent protesters, the Police decided to adopt a strategy of containment, thus avoiding casualties from direct confrontation. It was estimated that a few hundred people were inside PolyU and the Police asked them to leave via Block Y of Lee Shau Kee Building. From that day onwards until 28 November 2019, many protesters did leave at different times. The Police made arrest as they came out.[217] Some of those arrested included three who claimed themselves to be student reporters and 12 who said they were medical professionals but none could provide proof of their identity.[218] Thereafter, a photo showing a group wearing reflective vests identifying themselves as doctors, nurses and first aiders sitting on the ground with their hands zip-tied behind their backs was widely circulated. Some medical professionals expressed concern over police's handling of the group.[219] Some of the protesters tried to escape from PolyU by different means. Some dangerously zip-lined down a footbridge whereas some others crawled through the sewage pipes.[220] The standoff lasted until 28 November 2019 when the Police decided to search PolyU those still remaining inside and to clear the campus of dangerous materials, such as petrol bombs and the materials for such bombs, other offensive weapons and hazardous chemicals taken from the PolyU laboratories. The Police and FSD found 3 989 petrol bombs, 1 339 explosive items, 601 bottles of corrosive liquid, and 573 items of offensive weapons including 12 bows, 200 arrows and an air rifle.[221]

---

217 SCMP (2019-11-18). Polytechnic University war zone: how Hong Kong radicals got boxed in by police after two days of ferocious clashes. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong- kong/law-and-crime/article/3038308/polytechnic-university-war-zone-how-hong-kong-radicals

HK01 (2019-11-18). [11.18.港九全日總覽] 張達明曾鈺成陪理大學生離開 局勢稍緩. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399364/11-18港九全日總覽-張達明-曾鈺成陪理大學生離開-局勢稍緩

HK01 (2019-11-19). [11.1.全日總覽] 張翔離開理大無交代詳情 夏志誠指留守者疲累. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399778/11-19全日總覽-張翔離開理大無交代詳情-夏志誠指留守者疲累

HK01 (2019-11-20). [11.20.全日總覽] 理大全部義務急救員撤離 料有約百示威者留低. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/400262/11-20全日總覽-理大全部義務急救員撤離-料有約百示威者留低

HK01 (2019-11-21). [11.21.全日總覽] 理大再有十多人撤離 有示威者手拖手步出校園. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/400745/ 11-21全日總覽-理大再有十多人撤離-有示威者手拖手步出校園

218 Stand News (2019-11-18). 理大外圍捕 警:12 名自稱救護員被捕 未能證醫護資格 另 3 名自稱記者涉暴動被捕. Retrieved from https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/理大外圍捕-警-12-名自稱救護員被捕-未能證醫護資格-另-3-名自稱記者涉暴動被捕/

219 HKFP (2019-11-23). 'Unheard of in civilised countries': Top medical journal blasts Hong Kong police for treatment of medics at Polytechnic University. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/11/23/unheard-civilised-countries-top-medical-journal-blasts-hong-kong-police-treatment-medics-polytechnic-university/

220 HK01 (2019-11-19). [理大逃走記] 直擊示威者白天潛渠遁不遂 黑夜遊繩墮地負傷逃. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/399505/理大逃走記-直擊示威者白天潛渠遁不遂-黑夜遊繩墮地負傷逃#media_id=3572865

221 HKSAR Government (2019-11-29). Police search operation finished and cordon lifted at PolyU. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201911/29/P2019112900430.htm

SCMP (2019-11-28). Hong Kong Police seize more than 3,800 petrol bombs of Polytechnic University, saying campus siege will end on Friday. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3039681/hong-kong-police-team-enters-polytechnic-university-riot



Image 4-118: A group of people wearing reflective vests identifying themselves as doctors, nurses and first aiders arrested by the Police
(Image source: Telegram)

4.205 On 29 November 2019, the Police lifted the cordon around PolyU. Upon inspection, many facilities of the university were seriously damaged and graffiti was everywhere. The gymnasium was full of yoga mats, clothes and shoes. Rotten food was found inside the canteen emitting a foul odour. The entrances were scarred with signs of violent clashes.[222]

4.206 The figures on the weapons used and the arrests made by the Police on 17 and 18 November 2019 are given in the following table:

Date	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
	Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
17 Nov	1 530	1 344	172	279	142
18 Nov	3 293	3 188	667	499	1 071

Table 4-6: The use of police weapons and the number of arrests in major clashes on 17 and 18 November 2019[223]

4.207 Between 19 and 28 November 2019, the Police further arrested 312 people.

24 November 2019 - District Council Election

4.208 Despite speculations that the District Council Election would be postponed, the election was held peacefully on 24 November 2019. The pan-democratic camp won 85% of the contested seats. The intensity ofthe protests generally dropped following the election.

222 HKFP (2019-11-26). HKFP Lens: Hong Kong's devastated Poly U campus becomes a safety hazard after protest battle lockdown. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/11/26/hkfp- lens-hong-kongs-devastated-poly-u-campus-becomes-safety-hazard-week-brutal-protest-battles/

223 RTHK VNEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3



Image 4-119: A protesters hurled a petrol bomb outside PolyU
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 4-120: SCMV deployed outside PolyU
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 4-121: A police officer shot in the calf by an arrow
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-122: A protester hurled a petrol bomb on Cheung Wan Road Bridge

(Image source: HK01)

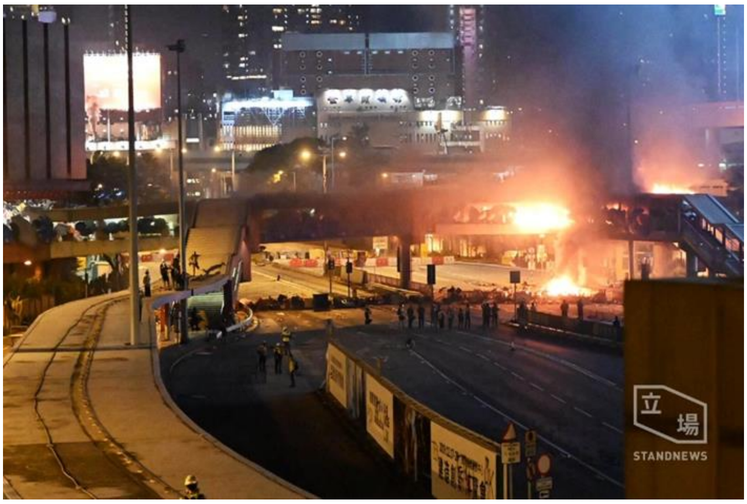


Image 4-123: Protesters clashed with the Police over the Cross Harbour Tunnel Toll Plaza

(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

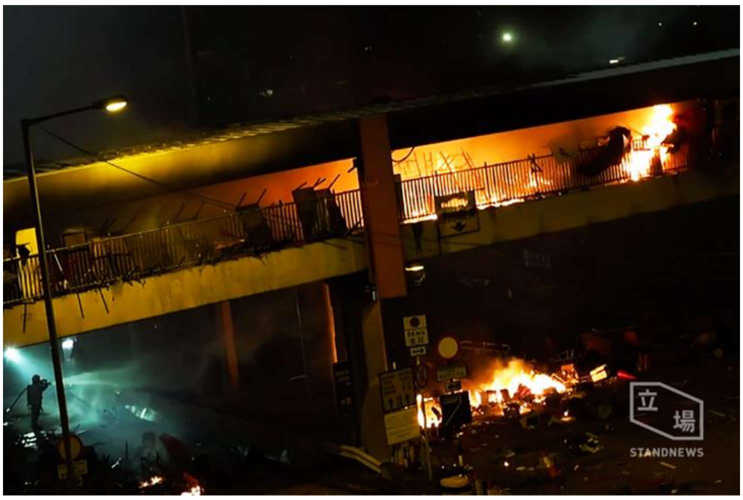


Image 4-124: Footbridge over the Cross Harbour Tunnel Toll Plaza set on fire

(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 4-125: Fire broke out at an entrance to PolyU
(Image source: HK01)



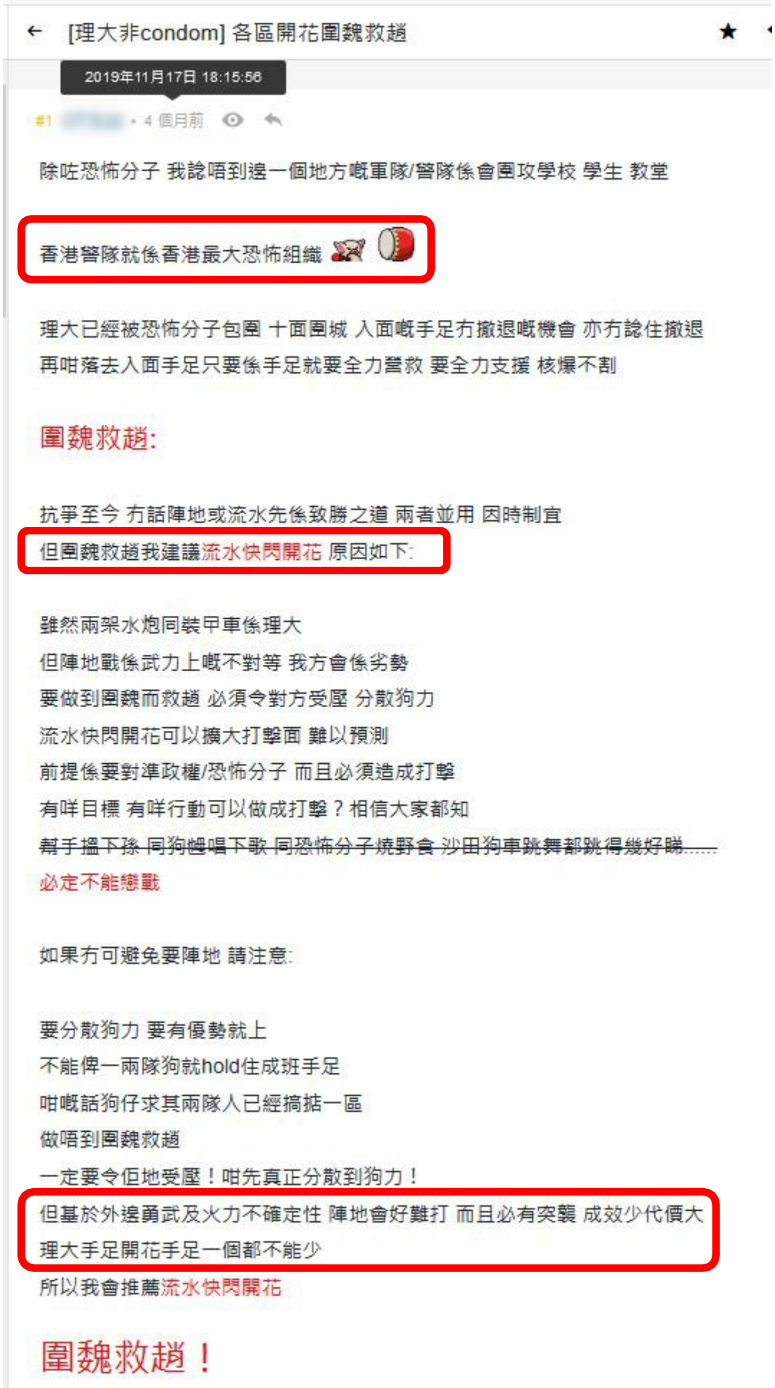
Image 4-126: Fire, road blocks and SCMV outside PolyU
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-127: Calls for “Protect PolyU” on 17 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-128: Calls for “Saving PolyU” on 18 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG


[理大非condom] 各區開花圍魏救趙

2019年11月17日 18:15:56

#1 • 4 個月前

除咗恐怖分子 我諗唔到邊一個地方嘅軍隊/警隊係會圍攻學校 學生 教堂

香港警隊就係香港最大恐怖組織

理大已經被恐怖分子包圍 十面圍城 入面嘅手足冇撤退嘅機會 亦冇諗住撤退
再咁落去入面手足只要係手足就要全力營救 要全力支援 核爆不割

圍魏救趙:

抗爭至今 冇話陣地或流水先係致勝之道 兩者並用 因時制宜
但圍魏救趙我建議流水快閃開花 原因如下:

雖然兩架水炮同裝甲車係理大
但陣地戰係武力上嘅不對等 我方會係劣勢
要做到圍魏而救趙 必須令對方受壓 分散狗力
流水快閃開花可以擴大打擊面 難以預測
前提係要對準政權/恐怖分子 而且必須造成打擊
有咩目標 有咩行動可以做成打擊？相信大家都知
~~幫手搵下孫 同狗蝟唱下歌 同恐怖分子燒野食 沙田狗車跳舞都跳得幾好睇......~~
必定不能戀戰

如果冇可避免要陣地 請注意:

要分散狗力 要有優勢就上
不能俾一兩隊狗就hold住成班手足
咁嘅話狗仔求其兩隊人已經搞掂一區
做唔到圍魏救趙
一定要令佢地受壓！咁先真正分散到狗力！
但基於外邊勇武及火力不確定性 陣地會好難打 而且必有突襲 成效少代價大
理大手足開花手足一個都不能少
所以我會推薦流水快閃開花

圍魏救趙！

Image 4-129: The Police was described “the largest terrorist organisation in Hong Kong” in a post calling for adopting urban guerrilla tactics on 17 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-130: Calls for adopting urban guerrilla tactics on 17 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

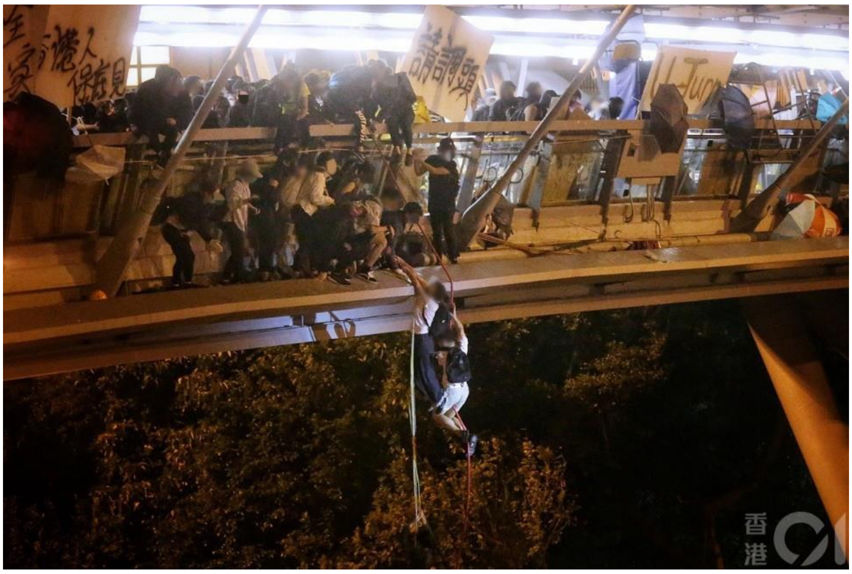


Image 4-131: Protesters attempted to leave PolyU by zip-lining
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-132: Protesters attempted to leave PolyU through sewage system
(Image source: HK01)

Protests in December 2019:

December 2019						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
1 Procession in Tsim Sha Tsui *(380 000 participants)* * A man being hit at the head with drain cover while clearing barricades	2	3	4	5	6	7
8 CHRF Procession *(800 000 participants)* * Arson at Courts	9 Bomb plot foiled	10	11	12	13	14 Bomb plot foiled
15 Protests in shopping malls	16	17	18	19	20	21
22	23	24 Protests in Shopping malls Arson at HSBC branch and Mong Kok Station	25 Protests in Shopping malls	26 Protests in shopping malls	27	28
29	30	31 4 month anniversary of the Prince Edward station Incident				

* Figures according to organiser

Highlights of December 2019

- **Protesters returned to the streets after a peaceful week on 1 December 2019. Shops were vandalised and petrol bombs were thrown at Cross Harbour Tunnel. A man, while voluntarily clearing barricades alone in Mong Kok, was attacked by a masked man with drain cover in early hours of 1 December. He suffered serious head injury as a result.**
- **First approved procession organised by CHRF since August 2019. Arson and vandalism resurfaced. It was the first time the Judiciary became a target in the protests.**
- **Two bomb plots foiled in a week.**
- **Violence broke out in shopping malls in various districts. Protesters disrupted the business of shops deemed to hold opposite views.**
- **On three consecutive days during the Christmas period, violence again broke out in shopping malls in various districts. The highest intensity of violence was witnessed on Christmas Eve, with protesters setting fire inside a branch of the Hongkong and**

Shanghai Banking Corporation (HSBC) in Mong Kok and also the Mong Kok Station.

- **Protesters commemorated the Prince Edward Station Incident by putting flowers outside Prince Edward Station.**

4.209 In December 2019, the level of violence of the protesters and the use of force by the Police fell sharply from the peak in November 2019. The arrest of hundreds of violent protesters in November 2019 during the siege of PolyU and the landslide victory of the pro-democracy camp in the District Council Election could be the reasons for the decline in violence. While public meetings and processions were still held in December 2019, episodes of "Lunch with You" and "shopping with you" gain prevalence this month. Shopping malls have become regular protest venues. In December 2019, the Police used a total of 166 rounds of tear gas, 66 rubber rounds, 27 super sock rounds, and ten react rounds, and arrested 698 persons.[224] 49 officers were injured compared to 119 and 101 in the previous months.



Image 4-133: Poster on Facebook account 香港人抗爭日程表 promoting "Lunch with You" on various days in December 2019 at different locations
(Image source: Facebook)

[224] Information provided by HKPF.

Sunday 1 December 2019 - Clashes in Whampoa after Procession in Tsim Sha Tsui

4.210 1 December 2019 was the first Sunday after the landslide victory of the pan-democratic camp in the District Council Election. After a week of relative calm, three approved public meetings and processions were held on 1 December 2019.[225] The turnouts for the two events in Central were relatively small, while the procession started in Tsim Sha Tsui entitled "毋忘初心大遊行" (Translation: Forget not our Objective) attracted around 380 000 participants, according to the organiser.[226] The Police estimated 16 000 at the peak. The procession was apparently intended to remind people the fight was not yet over despite a landslide victory in the District Council Election.

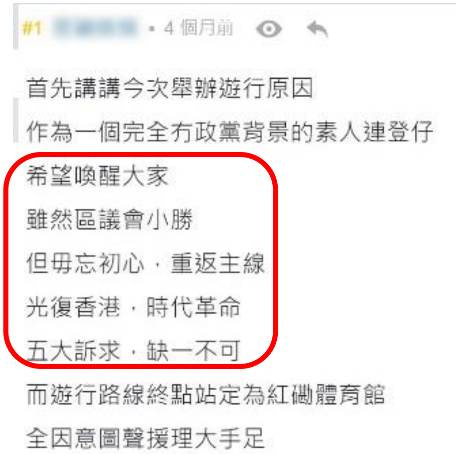


Image 4-134: Organiser explaining the reasons behind organising the 1 December March on LIHKG
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.211 The procession in Tsim Sha Tsui started peacefully with tens of thousands of people gathering at the clock tower to march to the Hong Kong Coliseum in Hung Hom chanting "Five demands, not one less" and other slogans. However, an hour later, a large number of protesters deviated from the designated route. A group a protesters set off smoke bombs which prompted the Police to fire tear gas into the densely packed assembly of participants. Some protesters threw objects at police officers in return. The procession later proceeded to Hung Hom Bypass where some protesters dropped bricks and glass bottles on the officers under the bridge. As repeated warnings were ignored, the Police proceeded to use OC Foam, batons, tear gas, rubber rounds, super socks rounds and pepper balls to disperse them.[227]

---

225 Ming Pao (2020-12-02). 抗爭未靜 區選後首遊行再現衝突 催淚彈射尖沙嘴遊行隊伍 示威者黃埔砸舖擲燃彈. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%e8%a6%81%e8%81%9e/article/20191202/s00001/1575224387490/抗爭未靜-區選後首遊行再現衝突-催淚彈射尖沙嘴遊行隊伍-示威者黃埔砸舖擲燃彈

226 RTHK (2020-12-01). 毋忘初心大遊行發起人稱有 38 萬人　警方指高峰萬多人. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1495445-20191201.htm

227 Information provided by HKPF.

4.212 In the evening, clashes erupted between violent protesters and the Police in Whampoa next to the designated destination of the procession. Apart from smashing shops which were deemed by the protesters to be holding opposing political view, traffic lights were also vandalised.[228] Fire were set at the entrance of Whampao Station. Protesters built barricades to block Hung Hom Road and Tak Man Street.[229] Petrol bombs were thrown at the Cross Harbour Tunnel. The Police responded by firing tear gas. After midnight, violent protesters set up a make-shift roadblock in Mong Kok and set it on fire. Violent protesters reverted to familiar tactics, not seen since the District Council Election.

4.213 In the early hours of 1 December 2019, a masked man attacked a man in Mong Kok with a gutter grille. The man, who suffered serious head injuries, had been removing barricades at that time.[230]

Sunday 8 December 2019 - Approved Procession Organised by CHRF

4.214 A public procession from Victoria Park in Causeway Bay to Chater Road in Central entitled "World Day of Human Rights Rally 2019" was staged by CHRF with LoNO. The first Police approved CHRF march since August 2019, it drew around 800 000 people[231] to the street on 8 December 2019, one day short of when Hong Kong raised the spectre of unrest on 9 June 2019. Police figured that the turnout peaked at 183 000. On its Facebook, CHRF posted promotional materials of the event suggesting that the march was intended to commemorate what happened in the past six months, e.g. the death of the HKUST student, the clashes at PolyU, the Yuen Long Incident and the Prince Edward Station Incident.

228 SCMP (2019-12-01). Masked protesters attack and trash shops in Hong Kong's Whampoa district after stand-off with police following end of march. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3040101/thousands-black-clad-protesters-return-hong-kong-streets

229 RTHK (2019-12-01). Tear gas in Whampoa as protesters smash up shops. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1495442-20191201.htm?archive_date=2019-12-01

230 SCMP (2019-12-01). Hong Kong man hit over head with drain cover while clearing protesters' barricades in Mong Kok. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3040106/hong-kong-man-hit-over-head-drain-cover-while-clearing

231 SCMP (2019-12-08). As it happened: 'about 800,000' join Hong Kong protest on eve of six-month anniversary of anti-government unrest. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038319/thousands-show-hong-kong-protest-organised-civil-human

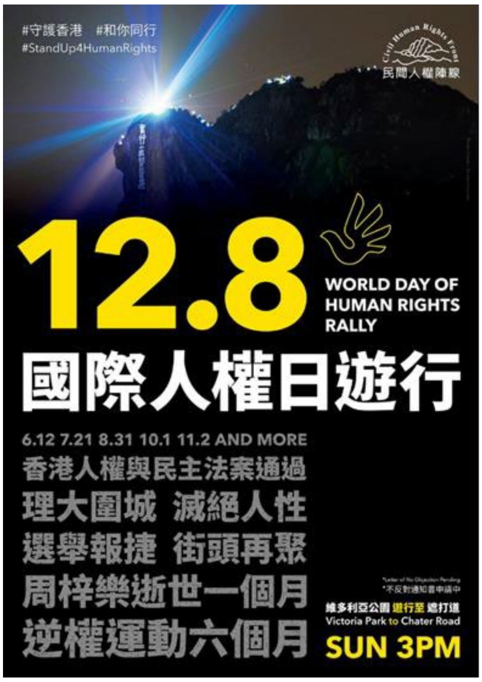




Image 4-135: Poster on CHRF Facebook before (left) and after (right) the procession on 8 December 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.215 The morning of 8 December 2019 saw the first time the Police seized a semi-automatic pistol from a flat in North Point, suspected to be intended for creating chaos during the procession to be held in the afternoon.[232] Besides the gun, daggers, knives and five ammunition magazines (three of them loaded) and 105 bullets were also seized. 11 people were arrested.

[232] SCMP (2019-12-08). Hong Kong police seize weapons including handgun ahead of mass protest. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3041132/hong-kong-police-seize-weapons-including-handgun-ahead



Image 4-136: More than one hundred participants of the march on 8 December 2019 wore over-sized masks of Pepe the frog and LIHKG pig, bringing the protest internet memes to life
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

4.216 The procession on 8 December 2019 starting from Causeway Bay was largely peaceful.[233] Before the march, protesters were standing off with the Police on Percival Street, when some people reportedly challenged police officers with insults, demanding that the crowd be allowed to pass. The head of the march left Victoria Park at 15:15, with a giant banner which read "Justice against police brutality, defend our rights". Participants were also seen waving British flags. Tension started to build up at around 16:30 in Central, where some violent protesters had set up barricades at Des Voeux Road Central, engaging in a standoff with the Police that continued into the evening. An SCMV and an armoured vehicle arrived at the scene on standby. Causeway Bay streets were still swamped by people waiting to start off even after the head of the march had reached the designated destination at about 16:45.[234]

233 SCMP (2019-12-08). After half a year of anti-government unrest, '800,000 marchers' take to Hong Kong streets. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3041172/after-half-year-anti-government-unrest-800000-marchers-take

234 Ibid.

4.217 At night, some violent protesters vandalised shops deemed to be pro-Government, and sprayed slogans outside the Bank of China Tower in Central.[235] Others spray-painted the exterior walls of the High Court, hurled petrol bombs at the entrance of the High Court and Court of Final Appeal. It was the first time the Judiciary became a target in the protests since June 2019.



Image 4-137: Fire was set at this entrance of the Court of Final Appeal
(Image source: HK01)

4.218 By 20:00, most of the protesters had left and the traffic returned to normal.[236] The large turnout on 8 December 2019 suggested that the POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill had not lost momentum, even after six months.

---

235 SCMP (2019-12-08). As it happened: 'about 800,000' join Hong Kong protest on eve of six-month anniversary of anti-government unrest. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038319/thousands-show-hong-kong-protest-organised-civil-human

236 SCMP (2019-12-08). As it happened: 'about 800,000' join Hong Kong protest on eve of six-month anniversary of anti-government unrest. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038319/thousands-show-hong-kong-protest-organised-civil-human



Image 4-138: Bank of China Tower targeted with graffiti
(Image source: Now TV)

<u>*Saturday 14 December 2019 – The Police Foiled a Bomb Plot in Tune Mun*</u>

4.219 The Police had foiled a second bomb plot in a week and three were arrested in Tune Mun allegedly testing explosive devices and chemicals. The Police view was that the plan could have been to detonate explosives at a protest rally.[237] Protective gear, shields, bulletproof vests and gas masks were also taken at the scene.[238] Earlier in the week, on 9 December 2019, two home-made devices containing ten kilograms of high explosives were found at Wah Yan College, Hong Kong.[239]

<u>*Sunday 15 December 2019 – "Shopping with You"*</u>

4.220 With the Christmas season around the corner, there were posts from 11 December 2019 appealing to netizens to participate in "Shopping with you", a mode of 'soft' protest at shopping arcades. On 15 December 2019, protesters assembled in various shopping malls for "Shopping with you".

---

237 RTHK (2019-12-14). Three men arrested for allegedly testing explosives. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1497681-20191214.htm?archive_date=2019-12-14

238 SCMP (2019-12-14). Hong Kong police foil second bomb plot in under a week and arrest three men allegedly testing explosive devices and chemicals. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3042123/hong-kong-police-foil-second-bomb-plot-under-week-and

239 SCMP (2019-12-09). Hong Kong police defuse two home-made bombs containing 10kg of explosives found on school grounds. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3041331/bomb-disposal-officers-deployed-after-two-suspected



Image 4-139: LIHKG post on 11 December 2019 promoting "Shopping with you" on 15 December 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-140: LIHKG post with details of "Shopping with you" on 15 December 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.221 Protesters staged citywide protests in seven shopping malls on 15 December 2019.[240] The protest in New Town Plaza in Sha Tin turned violent when black-clad protesters smashed the glass panels of the atrium, spray-painted slogans on the floor and confronted people with apparently different opinions. Early in the afternoon, a woman was spray-painted in the face after trying to stop protesters from spraying graffiti at New Town Plaza.[241] Later in the afternoon, masked protesters stormed into restaurants operated by the Maxim's Caterers Limited. They sprayed paint on the walls and flipped over tables. Customers were forced to leave as the restaurants were vandalised and closed. The Police then arrived and arrested at least five people at the scene. At around 18:30, a crowd of people surrounded a middle-aged woman whom they accused of taking close-up photos of protesters. They ended up repeatedly smashing her phone on the floor.[242] The Police later entered the shopping mall to stop protesters from blocking the entrances.[243] Batons and pepper spray were used, while protesters threw objects at the Police.

4.222 Similar scenes took place at Telford Plaza in Kowloon Bay and Metroplaza in Kwai Fong, where protesters disrupted the operation of restaurants.[244] There were also protests in Times Square in Causeway Bay, PopCorn in Tseung Kwan O, Cityplaza in Tai Koo Shing and Harbour City in Tsim Sha Tsui. Most shops closed early amid the chaos.

240 SCMP (2019-12-15). Hong Kong 'Christmas shopping' protests in several malls across city lead to vandalism of outlets and clashes. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3042169/hong-kong-protests-restaurants-spray-painted-and-diners

241 RTHK (2019-12-15). Protests halt Christmas shopping at Sha Tin mall. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1497765-20191215.htm?archive_date=2019-12-15

242 RTHK (2019-12-15). Protests halt Christmas shopping at Sha Tin mall. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1497765-20191215.htm?archive_date=2019-12-15

243 SCMP (2019-12-15). Hong Kong 'Christmas shopping' protests in several malls across city lead to vandalism of outlets and clashes. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3042169/hong-kong-protests-restaurants-spray-painted-and-diners

244 SCMP (2019-12-15). Hong Kong 'Christmas shopping' protests in several malls across city lead to vandalism of outlets and clashes. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3042169/hong-kong-protests-restaurants-spray-painted-and-diners

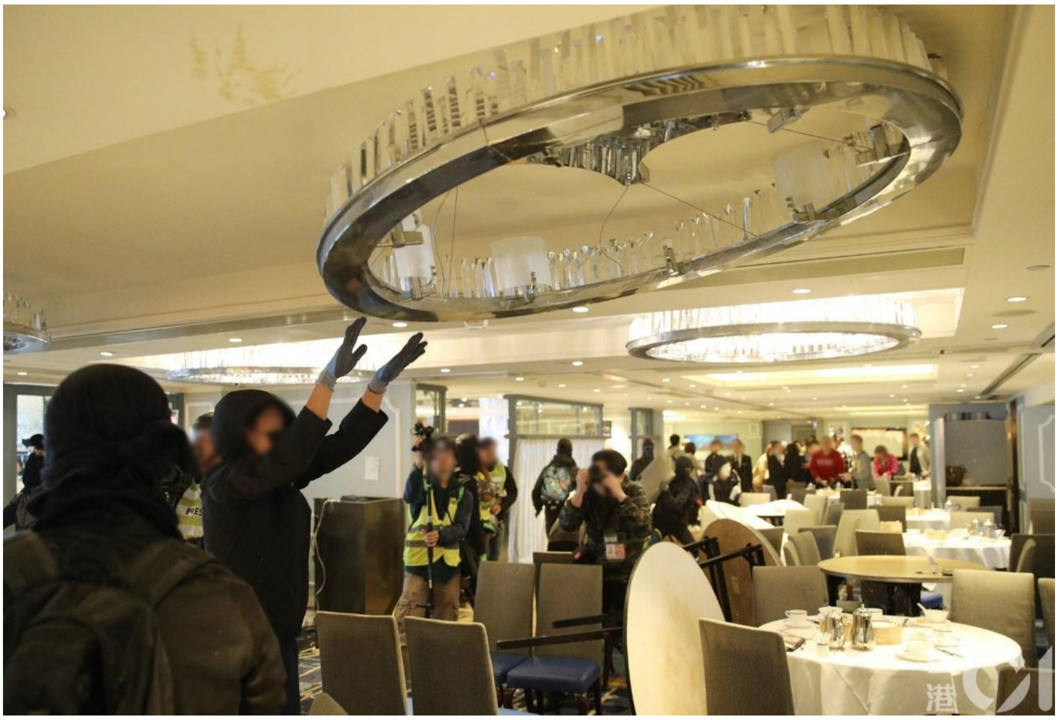


Image 4-141: Violent protesters vandalised a restaurant in New Town Plaza on 15 December 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.223 Later that night, large crowds lined up outside Pacific Place in Admiralty to commemorate the man who fell to his death six months ago on 15 June 2019.[245]



Image 4-142: People gathered outside Pacific Place on 15 December 2019
(Image source: HK01)

245 SCMP (2019-12-15). Hong Kong 'Christmas shopping' protests in several malls across city lead to vandalism of outlets and clashes. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3042169/hong-kong-protests-restaurants-spray-painted-and-diners

Tuesday 24 December 2019 – "Shopping with You" on Christmas Eve

4.224 On Christmas Eve, protesters gathered in various major shopping malls in different districts going on a "Shopping with You" protest. They visited restaurants, shops and banks deemed to be pro-Government or not supporting their actions.[246] Their tactics ranged from vandalism to causing nuisance and intimidating customers. Unrest spread to the districts. In response to the actions of the protesters, the Police fired tear gas, rubber rounds and pepper spray in multiple locations on Christmas Eve. Netizens have called for protests over Christmas, targeting shopping malls.



Image 4-143: Poster urging people to take part in the protest in shopping malls on 24 December 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.225 In Tsim Sha Tsui, protesters gathered outside Peninsular Hotel to disrupt traffic and, threw objects onto the road and at police officers at around 21:00.[247] The Police fired several

246 SCMP (2019-12-24). Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui MTR stations close as Hong Kong marks Christmas Eve with return to tear gas on streets and protest chaos in malls. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043449/hong-kong-marks-christmas-eve-return-mall-chaos-protesters

247 SCMP (2019-12-24). Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui MTR stations close as Hong Kong marks Christmas Eve with return to tear gas on streets and protest chaos in malls. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043449/hong-kong-marks-christmas-eve-return-mall-chaos-protesters

rounds of tear gas in response. An SCMV later was deployed to disperse the crowds. Petrol bombs were also thrown at Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station.[248] At Harbour City, protesters attacked people they suspected to be undercover officers and threw objects at officers entering the mall.[249] In return, the officers used baton to stop the protesters and yelled at them to stop throwing objects.

4.226 In Mong Kok, some violent protesters started a fire at one of the entrances of Mong Kok Station.[250] Both Mong Kok and Tsim Sha Tsui Stations were closed before 23:00. Protesters threw objects at police officers, and in response, officers used pepper spray on them.[251] Petrol bombs were thrown at police vehicles.[252] Protesters also targeted an HSBC branch in Mong Kok because it had earlier closed the account of Spark Alliance, a fund-raising platform for protesters.[253] They smashed up glass doors and set up a fire inside the branch. Protesters sprayed the message “don't forget Spark Alliance” on the walls of the building. 21 sets of traffic lights were damaged in Mong Kok.[254]

---

248 Press Releases of HKSAR (2019-12-24). Rioters throw petrol bombs at Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201912/24/P2019122400924.htm

249 RTHK (2019-12-24). Tear gas, pepper spray and clashes mar Christmas Eve. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499415-20191224.htm

250 SCMP (2019-12-24). Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui MTR stations close as Hong Kong marks Christmas Eve with return to tear gas on streets and protest chaos in malls. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043449/hong-kong-marks-christmas-eve-return-mall-chaos-protesters

251 RTHK (2019-12-24). Tear gas, pepper spray and clashes mar Christmas Eve. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499415-20191224.htm?archive_date=2019-12-24

252 SCMP (2019-12-24). Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui MTR stations close as Hong Kong marks Christmas Eve with return to tear gas on streets and protest chaos in malls. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043449/hong-kong-marks-christmas-eve-return-mall-chaos-protesters

253 RTHK (2019-12-24). HSBC building vandalised in Mong Kok. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499452-20191224.htm

254 SCMP (2019-12-25). Police use tear gas, pepper spray as Hong Kong Christmas protests turn ugly. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043493/police-use-pepper-spray-sporadic-clashes-christmas



Image 4-144: Protesters smashed the glass walls of HSBC's Mong Kok branch and started a fire at its entrance on 24 December 2019
(Image source: HK01)

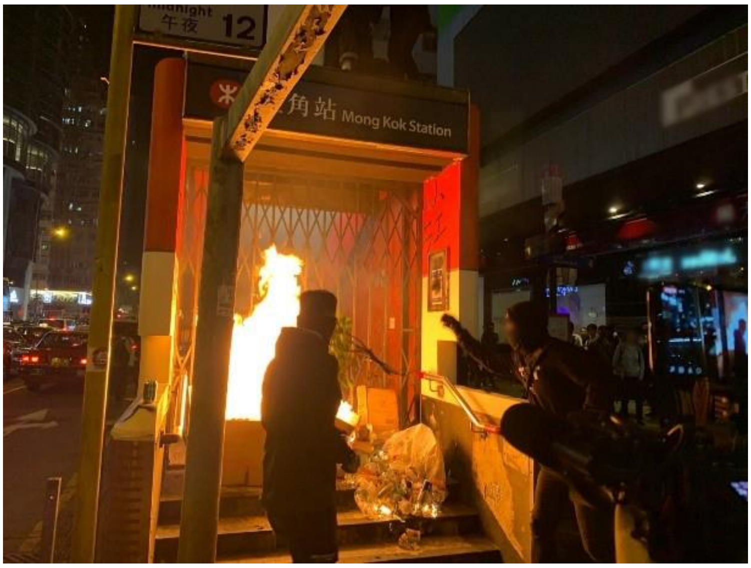


Image 4-145: Protesters set fire to an entrance to the Mong Kok Station on 24 December 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.227 Protests also occurred in New Town Plaza in Sha Tin, Yoho Mall in Yuen Long and Time Square in Causeway Bay. A man jumped from the second floor of Yoho Mall while running away from the Police. He was took care by paramedics in a conscious state and was later arrested on suspicion of assaulting police.[255]

[255] RTHK (2019-12-24). Man injured in mall jump while running from police. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499431-20191224.htm

Wednesday 25 December 2019 – "Shopping with You" on Christmas Day

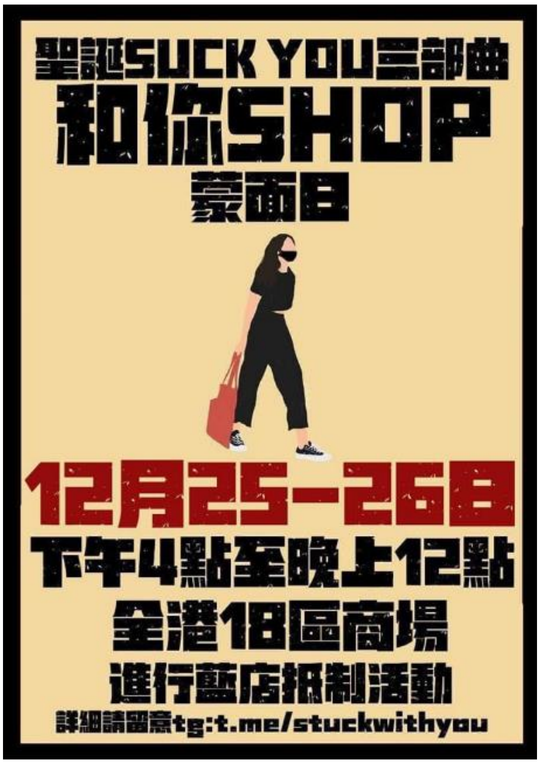


Image 4-146: Poster urging people to take part in the protest in shopping malls on 25-26 December 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.228 Similar to the night before, protesters took to the street and gathered in shopping malls on Christmas Day. Protesters chanted slogans and disrupted business deemed to be pro-Government in various shopping malls. In response to the disruption, the Police used batons and pepper spray on them in New Town Plaza in Sha Tin, outside Langham Place in Mong Kok and at Telford Plaza in Kowloon Bay.[256] The Police charged at a crowd of protesters in Mong Kok firing tear gas and arrested seven protesters as tensions rose for several hours. Near midnight, some protesters set fire in Dundas Street.

4.229 The clashes between protesters and the Police on Christmas Day were similar to the conflicts on Christmas Eve but on a smaller scale.

[256] SCMP (2019-12-25). Police use tear gas, pepper spray as Hong Kong Christmas protests turn ugly. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043493/police-use-pepper-spray-sporadic-clashes-christmas



Image 4-147: The Police fired tear gas and made arrest outside Langham Place at around 18:00 on Christmas Day
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-148: Protesters marching in Telfold Plaza in Kowloon Bay on 25 December 2019
(Image source: HK01)

<u>Thursday 26 December 2019 - Shopping with You on Boxing Day</u>

4.230 Similar protests continued on Boxing Day. Protesters assembled and walked around in Tai Po Mega Mall.[257] Some caused nuisance inside a restaurant by scattering menus and packets of condiments all over a table.

[257] RTHK (2019-12-26). Riot police swarm Tai Po mall and arrest protesters. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499643-20191226.htm?archive_date=2019-12-26

4.231 In Moko Mall in Mong Kok, protesters heckled customers at restaurants connected to the Mainland.[258] As the Police entered the mall, protesters threw potted plants and black paint at them.

4.232 Similar disturbances happened at Sogo and Time Square in Causeway Bay, Langham Place in Mong Kok, V City in Tuen Mun and Harbour City in Tsim Sha Tsui.[259]

Tuesday 31 December 2019 – Protests to Mark Four Months since the Prince Edward Station Incident

4.233 On New Year's Eve, protesters gathered at the Prince Edward Station to mark four months since the Prince Edward Station Incident. A group mourned the death of those were allegedly killed, placing flowers at the Prince Edward Station.[260] Officers from Mong Kok Police Station nearby came and cleared them. In response to the Police action, people put up more flowers. At around 19:00, the Police ordered the protesters, using pepper spray. Two hours later, at around 21:00, protesters rushed to occupy Nathan Road despite Police warning that they might use rubber rounds and super sock rounds.[261] The Police later deployed an SCMV on Nathan Road in Mong Kok to clear the crowd, after warning them several times to disperse. Armoured vehicles were also deployed to clear roadblocks set up by protesters on Nathan Road. The disturbance lasted to New Year's Day. In the small hours of 1 January 2020, some violent protesters hurled petrol bombs on Nathan Road in Mong Kok while others occupied the roads in the vicinity of Nathan Road and Shantung Street.[262] Tear gas was fired for dispersal.

4.234 On 31 December 2019, the Police fired 23 rounds of tear gas, 15 rubber rounds and one super sock round.[263]

---

258 SCMP (2019-12-26). After Christmas chaos, Hong Kong protesters plan major New Year's Day rally. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043547/hong-kong-protesters-and-police-clash-third-straight-day

259 SCMP (2019-12-26). After Christmas chaos, Hong Kong protesters plan major New Year's Day rally. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043547/hong-kong-protesters-and-police-clash-third-straight-day

260 RTHK (2019-12-31). Scuffles and pepper spray at Prince Edward MTR. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500378-20191231.htm?archive_date=2019-12-31

261 RTHK (2019-12-31). Water cannon fired on Nathan Road. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500406-20191231.htm?archive_date=2019-12-31

262 Press releases of HKSAR (2020-01-01). Rioters hurl petrol bombs in various districts. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202001/01/P2020010100074.htm

263 Ming Pao (2020-01-02).【元旦遊行】警昨 5 時許已擲催淚彈　今稱 7 時始用催淚煙應對汽油彈 (17:37). Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/ins/%E6%B8%AF%E8%81%9E/article/20200102/s00001/1577956910221/【元旦遊行】警昨 5 時許已擲催淚彈-今稱 7 時始用催淚煙應對汽油彈

Protests in January 2020:

January 2020						
Sun	**Mon**	**Tue**	**Wed**	**Thu**	**Fri**	**Sat**
			1 CHRF Procession *(1.03 million participants)* * HSBC lion sculptures were vandalised	2 Lunch with You	3	4
5	6 Lunch with You	7	8	9	10	11
12	13	14	15	16 Lunch with You	17 Lunch with You	18
19 Assembly at Chater Garden	20	21	22	23	24	25
26	27	28	29	30	31	

*Figure according to organiser

Highlights of January 2020

- **The frequency of large-scale protests decreased in 2020. On 1 January 2020, the procession organised by CHRF ended in violence with protesters damaging traffic lights, banks, restaurants and other targeted shops en route. Some violent protesters threw petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at police officers. The Police used OC Foam, batons, tear gas, rubber rounds and SCMV for dispersal.**
- **"Lunch with You" continued in various districts.**
- **On 19 January 2020, the assembly at Chater Garden ended in violence. Two police officers were attacked with wooden sticks. The Police fired tear gas to disperse the rally.**

4.235 The frequency of large-scale protests decreased in 2020, but still, some protests took place to commemorate the Yuen Long Incident, Prince Edward Station Incident and Mong Kok Riot in 2016.

4.236 The first day of 2020 was a continuation of unrest from the preceding year. Procession organised by CHRF on New Year's Day is a norm in recent years in Hong Kong. The number of participants in 2020 was a record. Later in the month, the attention shifted to the outbreak of COVID-19.



Image 4-149: 1 January 2020 – Protest on the New Year's Day
(Image source: HK01)

<u>*Wednesday 1 January 2020 – Procession Followed by Violence*</u>

4.237 On the first day of 2020, CHRF organised a public procession from Victoria Park in Causeway Bay to Central. The theme was "Keep our commitment, stand as one! —2020 New Year Rally". According to the organiser, there were over 1.03 million participants whereas the Police estimated 60 000 at peak. About two hours after the start of the procession at around 14:40, some violet protesters began to damage traffic lights, banks, restaurants and other targeted shops en route.

4.238 CHRF received notice from the Police at 17:30 to end the rally by 18:15. It immediately complied and asked people to leave.[264] The demand came after plainclothes officers arrested several people for vandalising the facilities of the bank just before 17:00. They vandalised an HSBC branch at the junction of Hennessy Road and Luard Road in Wan Chai by damaging the facilities therein such as glass door and automated teller machines (ATM).[265] After protesters had ignored repeated warnings from the Police, the Police used OC Foam, batons, tear gas, rubber rounds and SCMV for dispersal.[266] Some violent protesters damaged the traffic lights in the vicinity of Des Voeux Road Central and Pedder Street in Central at around 18:00.[267] On the other hand, thousands of people still stayed in the Causeway Bay area after the CHRF announcement of ending the procession. It was not clear if they were aware of CHRF's announcement. Meanwhile, hundreds of people were still in Victoria Park waiting to start the march when the Police ordered an end. At least three petrol bombs were threw at police officers but they all fell short.[268]

4.239 Some protesters set fire and spray-painted the lion sculptures of HSBC Headquarters in Central. An outer wall of High Court was also found spray-painted with words of hatred for a named judge.[269]



Image 4-150: Barricades were set on roads and fires started
(Source : Now TV)

[264] RTHK (2020-01-01). Police order end to march after Wan Chai clashes. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500513-20200101.htm

[265] RTHK (2020-01-01). Tear gas fired in Wan Chai, HSBC branch vandalised. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500509-20200101.htm

[266] Information provided by HKPF

[267] Press Releases of HKSAR (2020-01-01). Rioters damage traffic lights in Central. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202001/01/P2020010100679.htm

[268] RTHK (2020-01-01). Police order end to march after Wan Chai clashes. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500513-20200101.htm

[269] RTHK (2020-01-01). Vandalism of court, attack on judge condemned. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500554-20200101.htm?archive_date=2020-01-01



Image 4-151: Violent protesters vandalise an HSBC branch in Wan Chai
(Source : Now TV)

2, 6, 16, 17 January 2020 – "Lunch with You"

4.240 "Lunch with You" protests continued in January 2020. Some protesters called a "Lunch with You" rally on 2 January 2020. At about 13:00, about 100 citizens gathered in and around Statue Square in Central. The crowd walked towards Pedder Street and disbanded at about 13:45.[270] "Lunch with You" rallies continued in multiple districts.

4.241 On 6 January 2020, in Wan Chai and Causeway Bay, protesters walked along Hennessy Road and Johnston Road. Some people raised banners and shouted slogans common in the protests.[271]

4.242 On 16 January 2020, a "Lunch with You" rally was held in the Tsun Yip Street Playground in Kwun Tong. A crowd of about 100 moved towards How Ming Street, shouting slogans along the way. On the same day, a "Lunch with You/Write with You"est campaign was launched in Statue Square in Central. Dozens of people came and wrote slogans on scrolls.[272]

[270] ON.CC (2020-01-02). 修例風波：中環「和你 Lunch」皇后像廣場逾百人聚集. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20200102/bkn-20200102132017997-0102_00822_001.html

[271] RTHK (2020-01-06) 多區「和你 Lunch」參與者叫口號 有途人舉掌和應. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1501261-20200106.htm

[272] ON.CC (2020-01-16) 修例風波：網民續發起觀塘中環「和你 Lunch」Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20200116/bkn-20200116131010103-0116_00822_001.html

4.243 On 17 January 2020, protesters called a "Lunch with You" rally in Cheung Sha Wan and another in San Po Kong. About 30 people gathered in the parking lot of the Hong Kong Industrial Centre. About 70 protesters shouted "release the righteous" outside the Lai Chi Kok Reception Centre, a prison where arrested protesters were held. In San Po Kong, about 50 citizens gathered, including a number of students in school uniforms. Police officers were on alert but the rally was relatively calm.[273]

Sunday 19 January 2020 – Calling for Global Sanctions on Hong Kong Officials

4.244 On 19 January 2020, there was an assembly at Chater Garden calling for global sanctions on Hong Kong officials who undermined human rights. The organisers had sought to obtain a LoNO for a procession, but the Police only permitted a public meeting.[274] The assembly began at 15:00. One hour later, participants surrounded police officers and threw water bottles and debris in Des Voeux Road Central in Central. Some protesters also set up barricades with iron bars, bricks, traffic cones, and umbrellas. Some bricks on roads were dug up by the protesters and graffiti was sprayed on a building nearby. The Police decided to curtail the event at around 16:00. A few police officers entered Chater Garden to raise the matter with the organiser at about 16:30 for security reasons. Two of the officers were attacked with wooden sticks and sustained head injuries shortly after the organiser had agreed to call off the rally.[275] The Police fired tear gas outside Chater Garden to disperse the rally.[276] On that day, the organiser indicated that there were 150 000 attending the assembly, while the Police estimated a peak attendance of 11 680.[277]

---

[273] ON.CC (2020-01-17). 修例風波：網民發起長沙灣新蒲崗「和你 lunch」活動. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20200117/bkn-20200117130331257-0117_00822_001.html

[274] REUTERS (2020-01-20). Police arrest organizer of Hong Kong protest after rally turns violent. Retrieved from https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-protests/police-arrest-organizer-of-hong-kong-protest-after-rally-turns-violent-idUSKBN1ZJ0B3

[275] Ibid.

[276] HK01 (2020-01-19)【1.19】員警遇襲爆缸　施催淚煙驅散　外傭遭煙攻眼痛：很害怕. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/423800/1-19-員警遇襲爆缸-施催淚煙驅散-外傭遭煙攻眼痛-很害怕

[277] REUTERS (2020-01-20). Police arrest organizer of Hong Kong protest after rally turns violent. Retrieved from https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-protests/police-arrest-organizer-of-hong-kong-protest-after-rally-turns-violent-idUSKBN1ZJ0B3

Protests in February 2020:

February 2020						
Sun	**Mon**	**Tue**	**Wed**	**Thu**	**Fri**	**Sat**
						1
2	3 Lunch with You	4 Lunch with You	5	6	7	8 Commemoration of the death of the HKUST student
9	10	11	12	13	14	15
16	17	18	19 Commemoration of the death of a female VTC student	20	21 7 month commemoration of Yuem Long incident	22
23	24	25	26	27	28	29 6 month anniversary of the Prince Edward Station Incident

Highlights of February 2020

- **Large-scale protests subsided in February 2020 but small-scale protests continued. The "Lunch with You" continued at Central on 3 and 4 February 2020.**
- **Commemorations of the death of the HKUST and VTC students on 8 and 19 February 2020**
- **Commemorations of the Yuen Long Incident and the Prince Edward Station Incident continued in February 2020.**

4.245 In February 2020, street protests have almost been halted, probably because of COVID-19. While the frequency of large-scale protests had decreased, there were still some protests of small scale in different districts to commemorate some significant incidents occurred during the POEs in 2019.

Monday 3 and Tuesday 4 February 2020 – "Lunch with You"

4.246 On 3 February 2020, more than a hundred people gathered inside the IFC Mall in Central to participate the "Lunch with You" event.[278] The protesters were there to "Support Medical Strikes" so as to pressurise the Government to close the borders.



Image 4-152: Protest of "Lunch with You"
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

4.247 A "Lunch with You" event was held in Central on 4 February 2020 to support the strike of medical professionals. The protesters also reiterated the demand of setting up an independent commission of inquiry to investigate the police use of force.[279]

---

278 Inmediahk (2020-02-03). 中環「和你 Lunch」撐醫護罷工：香港人應做任何可以做的事. Retrieved from https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1070443

279 HKheadline (2020-02-04). 【修例風波】網民中環「和你 Lunch」 促政府封關及查警暴. Retrieved from https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1693942/即時-港聞-修例風波-網民中環-和你 Lunch-促政府封關及查警暴



Image 4-153: "Lunch with You" in Central
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

Saturday 8 February 2020 –Commemoration of the Death of the HKUST Student

4.248 In the evening of 8 February 2019, more than 100 citizens gathered at the parking lot of Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O, where the body of the HKUST student was found three months ago.[280] At 21:00, some protesters started to block the roads with bicycles and other items outside the Sheung Tak shopping mall. Rounds of tear gas were fired and 119 were arrested including five District Councillors.[281]

Wednesday 19 February 2020 –Commemoration of the Death of the female VTC Student

4.249 Some protesters initiated a gathering on the ground floor of the parking lot in Sheung Tak Village, Tseung Kwan O in remembrance of the HKUST student and the female VTC student. About 70 people participated in the event.[282]

280 Stand News (2020-02-08) 周梓樂逝世三個月　將軍澳有市民堵路　警方拘多人施放催淚彈. Retrieved from https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/周梓樂逝世三個月-將軍澳有市民堵路-警方拘多人施放催淚彈/

281 Apple Daily (2020-02-09) 【抗暴之戰】將軍澳防暴瘋狂拘 119 人包括 2 記者 年紀最少僅 13 歲 5 區議員包括西貢主席同被濫捕. Retrieved from https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/20200209/PLOMHJB5DGTJLCAKWRQM5A6NME/

282 ON.CC (2020-02-19). 修例風波：網民悼念陳彥霖離世 5 個月　防暴警到場戒備. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20200219/bkn-20200219212558564-0219_00822_001.html

Friday 21 February 2020 – Commemoration of Yuen Long Incident at YOHO Mall

4.250 To mark seven months of the Yuen Long Incident, a large number of protesters responded to online calls to gather in Yuen Long[283], Causeway Bay Station and Ma On Shan Station. The MTR closed the Yuen Long Station at 17:00. From 19:00, protesters started to gather at the atrium of the Yoho Mall in Yuen Long.[284] At about 23:00, some protesters blocked the main road in Yuen Long with plastic boxes and garbage. The Police later arrived to clear the road.[285] The commemoration in Causeway Bay Station and Ma On Shan Station were comparatively peaceful.

Saturday 29 February 2020 – Commemoration of Prince Edward Station Incident

4.251 In the evening of 29 February 2020, protesters gathered at the Prince Edward Station to mark six months of the Prince Edward Station Incident. It turned out to be the biggest outbreak of violence since the start of COVID-19.[286]



Image 4-154: The Police fired tear gas after protesters threw petrol bombs on 29 February 2020
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

283 RTHK (2020-02-21) 元朗 7.21 事件至今 7 個月 數百市民在商場靜坐集會. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1510041-20200221.htm

284 Ming Pao (2020-02-22). 「7．21」7 個月 200 人聚 Yoho Mall. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/港聞/article/20200222/s00002/1582309994750/「7-21」7 個月-200 人聚 yoho-mall

285 Apple Daily (2020-02-21). 【抗暴之戰】元朗 7.21 恐襲 7 個月 300 市民聚 Yoho Mall 悼念. Retrieved from https://hk.appledaily.com/breaking/20200221/5BY6BVIGL3TOCITSITBVTYCAII/

286 SCMP (2020-02-22). Hong Kong police arrest 115 after biggest outbreak of protest violence since coronavirus crisis. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3053025/hong-kong-protests-riot-police-fire-tear-gas-pepper-spray

4.252 In the evening, hundreds gathered at Exit A of the Prince Edward Station, near Mong Kok Police Station. The Police said in a press release that protesters shone laser pointers, built barricades and set fires on roads at around 18:00 outside the police station.[287] The protesters also threw petrol bombs at the junction of Nathan Road and Argyle Street at 20:30. Violent protesters occupied the roads by makeshift barricades in the Mong Kok area near Prince Edward Station. They threw petrol bombs and bricks at police officers. The Police responded by firing rounds of tear gas. It has been over three weeks since the Police last deployed tear gas.



Image 4-155: Protesters used umbrellas to protect from tear gas and pepper spray
(Image Source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 4-156: Protest at Mong Kok
(Image Source : HK01)

[287] HKFP (2020-03-01). In Pictures: Tear gas, pepper spray, 115 arrests during clashes in Mong Kok, as police officer pulls gun on protesters. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2020/03/01/pictures-tear-gas-pepper-spray-clashes-mong-kok-police-officer-pulls-gun-protesters/

4.253 On that evening, a police officer pointed his gun at protesters attacking him during a standoff around Nathan Road. The Police later explained that the officers drew his weapon because he feared for his life as protesters hurled brick, stones, bamboo sticks and other hard objects at him.[288]

4.254 115 people were arrested over the night.[289]

[288] HKFP (2020-03-01). In Pictures: Tear gas, pepper spray, 115 arrests during clashes in Mong Kok, as police officer pulls gun on protesters. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2020/03/01/pictures-tear-gas-pepper-spray-clashes-mong-kok-police-officer-pulls-gun-protesters/

[289] RTHK (2020-03-01). 115 arrested after night of violence in Mong Kok. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1511792-20200301.htm

Protests in March 2020:

March 2020						
Sun	**Mon**	**Tue**	**Wed**	**Thu**	**Fri**	**Sat**
1	2	3	4	5	6	7
8 Commemorati on of the death of the HKUST student	9	10	11	12	13	14
15	16	17	18	19	20	21 8 month commemoration of the incident on 21 July
22	23	24	25	26	27	28
29	30	31 7 month commemoration of the Prince Edward Station Incident				

Highlights of March 2020

➢ **Less violence and small-scale protests were noted in March 2020. Commemorations of the death of the HKUST student, the Yuen Long Incident and the Prince Edward Station Incident were held.**

4.255 In March 2020, the city's attention shifted to COVID-19. There were only a few activities in commemoration of several significant incidents.

Sunday 8 March 2020 - To Commemorate the Death of the HKUST Student

4.256 To mark four months since of the death of the HKUST student, some protesters gathered to mourn for him in the Kwun Tong Promenade and the parking lot at Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O, where his body was discovered. At about 20:00, several hundred people went to the carpark to mourn his death and observed a minute of silence. At 20:20, the Police gave warning that the assembly was unauthorised, and asked the protesters and journalists to leave. The Police blocked a pedestrian road and checked identity cards and belongings of nearly 300 people.[290] A total of 63 persons were arrested that night.

Saturday 21 March 2020 - Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident

4.257 To mark eight months since the Yuen Long Incident, some protesters gathered in Yuen Long at night. They blocked roads and threw petrol bombs in Citistore on Tai Tong Road. In response, police officers fired multiple rounds of tear gas, rubber rounds and used pepper spray for dispersal.[291] 61 people were arrested, including the Chairman of Yuen Long District Council.[292] Following the arrest of the Chairman of Yuen Long District Council, a joint statement of 17 District Council Chairmen, Vice-Chairmen and representatives criticised the Police for abuse of the power of arrest.[293]

Tuesday 31 March 2020 - Commemoration of Prince Edward Station Incident

4.258 To mark seven months since the Prince Edward Station Incident, protesters brought flowers and gathered at the Prince Edward Station from 19:00.

---

290 AsiaTimes (2020-03-09). HK police arrest more than 80 over protests. Retrieved from https://asiatimes.com/2020/03/hk-police-arrest-more-than-60-over-protests/

291 Information provided by HKPF.

292 MingPao (2020-03-22) 7．21 事件 8 個月 催淚彈再現警拘數十人. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/港聞/article/20200322/s00002/1584815370397/7-21 事件 8 個月-催淚彈再現警拘數十人

293 Inmediahk (2020-03-21). 元朗區議會主席黃偉賢被捕——十七區區議會正副主席及離島民主派區代表聯席會議聯合聲明. Retrieved from https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1071760?fbclid=IwAR3zIpllR99bpn6NQkqk0GcaRtPZuNUdtbOkUWXUCa9x6WlQAShCzmn5Qp0



Image 4-157: Protesters commemorated the Prince Edward Station Incident outside Prince Edward Station on 31 March 2020
(Image source : HK01)

4.259 Later in the same evening, some protesters blocked the roads in the vicinity. Petrol bombs were thrown at the nearby Police Sports and Recreation Club and Mong Kok East Station. Police officers used pepper spray and batons to disperse the protesters.[294] At least ten protesters were intercepted and searched[295], and four were arrested that night.[296]

---

294 Information provided by HKPF

295 RTHK (2020-03-31). 831 太子站事件 7 個月　市民到站外聚集並獻花. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1518056-20200331.htm

296 Newsflare (2020-04-01). Hong Kong Police makes four arrests during protests in Mong Kok. Retrieved from https://www.newsflare.com/video/347837/hong-kong-police-makes-four-arrests-during-protests-in-mong-kok

<u>IPCC Observations</u>

4.260 The IPCC notes that the protests since June 2019 have been attended by a degree and scale of violence unprecedented in recent history. The violence has shown some signs of waning from January 2020 onwards and has been further attenuated by the epidemic now afflicting our community. But it is possible that despite the damage that has been wrought by the violence and the potential consequences that might bring to Hong Kong's economy, it might once again re-ignite as the epidemic passes. That is a matter for the future. Whilst no one can predict the future, we can at least learn lessons from the past.

4.261 Although the triggering event was the Fugitive Offenders Bill, the protests continued even after the Government announced on 15 June 2019 that it would suspend the Bill. On multiple occasions between June and August 2019, the Chief Executive re-affirmed that the Bill was dead and there was no plan to revive it. On 4 September 2019, the Government finally announced the full withdrawal of the Bill. Yet, the protests persisted, and even escalated in violence until December 2019 when signs of decline began to surface.

4.262 This Study revealed that the protests were accompanied by a scale and depth of lawlessness and violence not seen in Hong Kong since the riots of 1967. The lawlessness and violence varied from blocking roads, throwing bricks, attacking Police cordons with umbrellas (some with sharpened tips), to hurling petrol bombs and setting fire on streets and to public and private property or vandalising banks, shops and MTR stations. From early August 2019 onwards, petrol bombs were used at almost every protest, hurled at police officers, and public and private property.

4.263 In November 2019, the two universities occupied became the factories for manufacturing petrol bombs for use in the clashes with the Police outside the campus. Sling shots were seen to be deployed from July 2019 onwards. And as time went on, assorted potentially lethal weapons were seen being used in the streets against the Police, traffic network, public and private property.

4.264 The damage to public and private property was significant. The full extent of the damage has not been fully studied but to the extent the IPCC can gather, a list appears at Annex 1 to this Chapter.

4.265 In the past months there have been cases, where the Police have discovered bomb making materials and instruments enabling remote detonation. Guns and live ammunition were also found and persons involved arrested. If these weapons had been deployed, the consequences would be unimaginable. The Commissioner has warned that Hong Kong may be heading into an era of terrorism.

4.266 While the protests have been characterised by the media and scholars to be leaderless (無大台), there were visible signs of various forms of organisation at every violent protest, such as co-ordinated protest tactics, the availability of large amounts of petrol bombs and gas masks of similar designs and large numbers of lasers. There has been great inventiveness in the use of the internet, a feature of the protests which will be dealt with below. For example, the internet was used in convening protests and disseminating real-time information on police mobilisation, and teaching protesters in the fabrication and use of weapons. The inventiveness in use of the internet also extended to rapid assembly of information for doxxing police officers and their families and the fashioning of large amounts of hate messages and propaganda against the

Police. The discovery of rifles and hand guns and substantial amounts of live ammunition in recent months, as well as large amounts of materials for bomb making suggest some form of organisation behind these activities.

4.267 On 8 January 2020, the S for S in response to questions raised by Legislative Councillors said that some protesters "*had received training*".[297] He elaborated that, "*It seems that in every operation or incident, they will plan in advance with a deliberate plot in a syndicated manner. In terms of resources and mobilisation, we don't believe that a handful of unorganised rioters could orchestrate such events.*"

4.268 At various times, some news articles reported that Mainland officials had mentioned about foreign influences behind the protests.[298] In the telephone survey of members of the public conducted by the Centre for Communication and Public Opinion Survey of CUHK, 9.4% to 11.6% of respondents thought foreign forces should be responsible for the escalation of violence in the protests. More details are given in Chapter 15: Perceptions of Police Officers, Protesters and General Public.

4.269 It is not the purpose of this Study and the IPCC has no power to investigate into whether there was any organisation behind the protests or whether there were foreign influences. The possible existence of organisation or foreign influences behind the protests is a dimension of law enforcement. If organisation or foreign influences does indeed exist, then that adds to the difficulty of law enforcement. That is a matter for the Commissioner to take into account in the maintenance of law and order.

The Essential Features of the Protests

4.270 The essential features of the protests in the past months have been:

(1) Continual metamorphosis of the demands of the protesters from initially asking for withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill to investigation of police brutality by an independent commission of inquiry and calls for universal suffrage together with other demands, including a full amnesty for all persons arrested or involved in the protests and even disbandment of the Police Force;

297 SCMP (2020-01-08). Hong Kong protesters have been receiving training from foreign forces, city's security chief says, while also revealing more than 3,700 phones were seized and broken into. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3045255/hong-kong-protesters-have-been-receiving-training-foreign

298 SCMP (2019-10-22). Hong Kong protest violence being fanned by foreign forces, China's Wang Yi claims. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/china/article/3033963/chinas-wang-yi-blames-foreign-forces-sowing-chaos-hong-kong

New York Times (2019-10-15). In Hong Kong Protests, China Angrily Connects Dots Back to U.S. Retrieved from https://www.nytimes.com/2019/09/05/world/asia/china-hong-kong-protests.html

Hong Kong Free Press (2019-07-24). China says it will 'not tolerate foreign forces' in Hong Kong. Retrieved from https://hongkongfp.com/2019/07/24/china-says-will-not-tolerate-foreign-forces-hong-kong/

Reuters (2019-06-10). Chinese paper says 'foreign forces' using Hong Kong havoc to hurt China. Retrieved from https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-extradition-march-china/chinese-paper-says-foreign-forces-trying-to-create-havoc-in-hong-kong-idUSKCN1TA0U4

(2) The use of the internet in spreading hatred against the Police, resulting in threats, intimidations and attacks on individual police officers whether in or out of duty and their families. In the most serious cases, an on duty officer was slashed in his neck and another off duty officer set on fire. There were many other instances where individual police officers who had fallen behind their teams were ferociously attacked by mobsters with potentially lethal weapons; and

(3) Escalation of the violence, including blocking of streets, destruction of public and private property, disabling of major transport infrastructure, vigilantism against persons of different opinions, resulting in a person being killed by a brick hurled at him, and the setting on fire of another person.

The Ascent of Technology

4.271 Possibly the most important feature of the protests is the use of technology. The protests have been characterised by the media and scholars to be leaderless but is evident that the internet social media have played a key role in driving the protests forward. Practically instant and widespread communications were effected through social media, including Facebook, Instagram, WhatsApp, LIHKG and Telegram.

4.272 The internet was clearly the power and the driving force for continuing and escalating protests. It mobilises protesters to take part in the protests and gives momentum to the protests by providing a platform for the dissemination of propaganda materials, messages of hatred against the Police and other unsupported claims to launch rallies, perpetrate acts of violence, and doxxing police officers and their families. All protests to date have been called through the internet. And to facilitate the protesters, an App has since August 2019 appeared showing the real-time dispositions of the Police. This is an App updated by all persons watching the movements of the Police. In effect, it is a battlefield App giving information of enemy movements. The ability to track the movements of the Police, was no doubt a factor emboldening protestors in using violence, as their tactics could be adjusted by the information posted on the App.

4.273 The internet was not only an important convening force but effectively the medium by which propaganda[299] against the Police was created and swiftly disseminated. The propaganda to date has been a continuing message of hatred against the Police for what the internet messages termed “police brutality” against “comrades in protest”. It was easy for such propaganda to gain credibility among protesters as they came face-to-face with law enforcement action by the Police or when their attacks of police officers and police stations were repulsed by police action, even if the force used was less than lethal. This message of hatred was not only a means for convening more protests but also a platform for inciting escalating violence against police stations, police officers and police quarters.

4.274 There have been a number of tragic deaths which the propaganda on the internet have attributed to the Police, with no more basis than a mere allegation. In June 2019, a protester fell from a scaffolding at Pacific Place, Admiralty. In the same month, two female committed suicide leaving notes with message to carry on the protest. The Prince Edward Station Incident spawned bare allegations of killings by the Police and another girl whose dead body found in

[299] The dictionary definition of “Propaganda” is “information, especially of a biased or misleading nature, used to promote a political cause or point of view”.

the sea was alleged to have been "suicided" by the Police, again with no more basis than a mere allegation. In November 2019, a young university student fell to his death from height. Despite the CCTV footage released by LINK to the public showing that no policeman was on the floor from which this unfortunate student most probably fell, the death was nonetheless used for hate messages on the internet against the Police.

4.275 In addition, the internet was used as a platform for teaching protesters on the making of petrol bombs, along with inciting more violent protests. Annex 3 to this Chapter provides a summary of the convening and propaganda powers of the internet.

4.276 In the chapters relating to specific incidents (Chapters 7 to 12), the IPCC have made various observations and recommendations on timely Police response to incidents which would assist the Police to spread their explanations. The use of the internet requires careful study on how future strategies for policing public order should be fashioned. The IPCC recommends that the Commissioner to review the capacity of the Police to utilise the power and impact of the internet in support the Police in the maintenance of law and order for the HKSAR.

The Continuing Message of Police Brutality

4.277 This Overview reveals that the protests continue to be driven by the message of police brutality in social media and elsewhere. It must be recognised that civilized society is not based on the use or threat of force, but in the free and peaceful exchange of ideas. The use of force by anyone is illegal, save in exceptional circumstances. These exceptional circumstances fall into two essential classes:

(a) Law enforcement, where the law allows the use of force under legally defined circumstances by officers empowered to enforce the law, where the law has been broken or where there is reasonable belief that the law is about to be broken; and

(b) Self-defence of person or property or defence of the person or property of another, when faced with unlawful use of force.

4.278 In the past months of violent protests, roads were blocked, transport infrastructure seriously affected, public and private property destroyed, and police officers and private citizens attacked. Protesters used sling shots and arrows, threw petrol bombs, and deploy a variety of weapons. These are illegal acts, which could have fatal consequences.

4.279 This Overview reveals that in the face of these illegal and potentially lethal acts, the Police has had to enforce the law and to protect themselves against harm. Over 590 police officers have been injured. When attacked with potentially lethal consequences, the Police has, except in 12 instances, deployed less than lethal force. In those 12 instances, 19 live rounds were deployed, three persons were injured and they have now been discharged from hospital. As has been seen in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing, the Police has strict guidelines governing the use of weapons and an investigation procedure reporting up to the level of the Director of Operations where live rounds were deployed.

4.280 With a view to complying with the law, the Police has in place policies, procedures and training for the use of force in law enforcement. Whilst these are extensive, there is obvious room for improvement and this Study has made a set of recommendations for improvement of these guidelines in Chapter 6. As an institution the Police has a large collection of guidelines

for the use of force and a system of management review every time force is used. This Study reveals that the Police use of force in the past months have been in reaction to the violence directed against them and in execution of their duties under the PFO and the POO, where they would need to disperse crowds or make arrests of persons who have offended the law.

The Complaints System

4.281 However, this cannot discount or excuse the possibility of individual officers over-stepping the law and insufficient supervision in specific cases. The complaints system is designed to deal with these situations.

4.282 Chapter 5: Synopsis of Complaints deals with the complaints received up to end of February 2020 and provide information as to how they will be dealt with. The IPCC notes that 20.5% of the RCs came from reporters.[300] The IPCC fully appreciates the work of reporters on the ground as it is their duty to get the best news coverage possible. However, it must be balanced with the safety of the reporters themselves, the protesters and the police officers, and at the same time not to hinder the frontline police officers in action. This Report is intended to assist the IPCC in monitoring and reviewing the investigation of all RCs lodged with CAPO.

The Commissioner's Supervisory Powers

4.283 As to cases where no complaints have been made, the events in the past months, has been the most widely and deeply photographed and video-recorded events in history of Hong Kong to date, where in the footage, if there is evidence of overstepping the mark as to application of force, the IPCC would expect the Commissioner to step in and put his house in order.

[300] Chart 5-3 in Chapter 5 refers.

ANNEX 1

LIST OF DAMAGE AND IMPACT CAUSED BY THE PROTESTS
(The information contained below is accurate to the best of knowledge of the IPCC based on available information)

<u>Private Property</u>

- Branches and ATM of banks connected to the Mainland were frequent targets of vandalism and arson by violent protesters.
- Several HSBC branches were targeted by violent protesters in December 2019.
- Shops owned by companies, which were:
  (1) connected to the Mainland;
  (2) supported the Mainland Government or Hong Kong Government; or
  (3) allegedly connected to the Fujianese

  were frequent targets of vandalism and arson by violent protesters.

A. Banks
• Bank of China • Bank of Communication • Bank of East Asia • China Construction Bank (Asia) • CMB Wing Lung Bank • Hang Seng Bank • HSBC • Industrial and Commercial Bank of China • Shanghai Commercial Bank
B. Restaurants and others
• Beijing Tong Ren Tang • Best Mart 360 • Café de Carol • China Life Insurance • China Mobile • China Travel Service (Hong Kong) • Chung Hwa Bookstore • CR Care • Fulum Restaurant • Hey Tea • Luen Fat Mahjong Playing • Lung Mun Café • Maxim's Caterers Limited and associated franchises, including Arome, Maxim's Cakes, Maxim's Palace, Genki Sushi, Starbucks, SimplyLife, Peking Garden, etc. • McDonald's • Miniso • Pacific Coffee • Sasa • Sing Thai Cuisine

- Tai Hing, TeaWood (brand restaurants of Tai Hing Group)
- Tsui Wah Restaurant
- Uniso
- Xiaomi
- Yifang
- Yoshinoya

Public property

A. Government / Public Property
• Central Government Offices • Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices • Court of Final Appeal • High Court • Immigration Tower • Kowloon City Government Offices • Kowloon Government Offices • Kowloon Tong Education Services Centre • Kwai Hing Government Offices • Legislative Council Complex • Leisure and Cultural Services Headquarters • North District Community Centre and Town Hall • North District Government Offices • Public Health Laboratory Centre • Sai Kung Tseung Kwan O Government Complex • Sha Tin District Office Ma On Shan Sub-office • Sha Tin Government Offices • Sha Tin Magistrates' Court • Tai Hing Government Offices • Tai Po Complex • Tai Po Government Offices • Trade and Industry Tower • Tsuen Wan Government Offices • Tuen Mun Government Offices • Tuen Mun Town Hall • Wanchai Tower • Yuen Wo Road Indoor Recreation Centre
B. Police Stations and Related Premises
• Castle Peak Police Station • Central Police Station • Cheung Sha Wan Police Station • Happy Valley Police Station • Hong Kong Police Headquarters • Kwai Chung Police Station • Kwun Tong Police Station • Ma On Shan Police Station

• Mong Kok Police Station • New Territories South Regional Police Headquarters • North Point Police Station • Sha Tin Police Station • Sham Shui Po Police Station • Shau Kei Wan Reporting Centre • Tai Po Police Station • Tin Shui Wai Police Station • Tin Sum Police Station • Tseung Kwan O Police Station • Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station • Tsuen Wan Junior Police Call Club House • Tsuen Wan Police Station • Tuen Mun Police Station • Wong Tai Sin Disciplined Services Quarters
C. Other Premises
• City University of Hong Kong • Gun Club Hill Barracks • Heung Yee Kuk in Sha Tin • Hong Kong Baptist University • Hong Kong Federation of Trade Unions in Ma Tau Wai • Independent Commission Against Corruption (ICAC) office • Liaison Office of the Central People's Government and its New Territories office in Sha Tin • Nine offices of Legislative Council / District Council Members • Office of Xinhua News Agency in Wan Chai • The Chinese University of Hong Kong • The Hong Kong Polytechnic University • The Hong Kong University of Science and Technology • The University of Hong Kong

Traffic network

A. Traffic Infrastructure[1]
• 740 sets of traffic lights, 365 of which were vandalised more than once[2] • The total number of traffic light damages amounted to 1,590 • Around 55 km long of iron railings removed / damaged • Around 22 000 square meters of paving blocks of footpaths • 1 463 traffic island bollard • 87 traffic signs • Toll booths of Cross-Harbour Tunnel • 20 Smart Lampposts

1 Government Press Releases (2020-01-08). LCQ13: Countermeasures against traffic chaos. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202001/08/P2020010800302.htm
Information from HKPF

2 Government Press Releases (2020-01-08). LCQ13: Countermeasures against traffic chaos. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202001/08/P2020010800302.htm

B. Buses and Other Public Vehicles[3]
• 420 franchised buses • 100 public light buses, taxis and non-franchised buses • seven tram cars
C. MTRC network and facilities[4]
• 1 976 gates of Automatic Fare Collection • 1 154 ticketing machines, add value machines, enquiry machines, Officer Smart Card processor terminals • 1 592 light rail platform Octopus processors • 1 289 CCTV Cameras • 312 information display panels • 363 break glass units • 311 portable fire extinguishers • 81 lifts • 117 escalators • 1 884 lighting units • 309 glass panels of platform screen doors • 1 130 entrance glass panels • 221 entrance roller shutters • 85 MTR stations • 62 light rail stations
D. Air transport[5]
• More than 1 000 flights cancelled

3 Government Press Releases (2019-12-11). LCQ5: Supporting public transport sector. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201912/11/P2019121100493.htm?fontSize=1

4 Information provided by MTRC to Police as at 31 March 2020

5 SCMP (2019-08-15). Hong Kong airport struggles to pick up pieces after 1,000 flights grounded as security tightened after court order secured to clear protesters. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3022841/hong-kong-airport-struggles-pick-pieces-after-1000-flights
Airport Authority (2019-09-01). Traffic to and from Airport severely obstructed by public assembly Airport Authority implements contingency measures to safeguard normal operations of Terminal Buildings. Retrieved from https://www.hongkongairport.com/en/media-centre/press-release/2019/pr_1427
Ming Pao (2019-08-06). 快閃堵三隧 15 幹道受阻. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%e8%a6%81%e8%81%9e/article/20190806/s00001/1565030065902/快閃堵三隧-15 幹道受阻

Deterioration of Crime Situation

Crime figures showed that there was a 9.2% increase in the crimes reported in 2019 (59 225) comparing to those in 2018 (54 225). Violent crimes in 2019 also increased by 9.1% from 8 884 cases to 9 690 cases. According to the Police, the increase in crime reports was attributed to the crimes committed in the protests and the thinning out of police resources in coping with daily crime work.[6]

Overall crime and violent crime situation[7]

Year	Overall Crime	Violent Crime
2019	59 225 (↑9.2%)	9 690 (↑9.1%)
2018	54 225 (↓3.2%)	8 884 (↓2.2%)
2017	56 017 (↓7.6%)	9 086 (↓10.1%)
2016	60 646 (↓8.7%)	10 103 (↓7.2%)
2015	66 439	10 889

Economy in General

A. Unemployment rate[8]
• The seasonally adjusted unemployment rate increased to 3.3% for October 2019 to December 2019 • It further increased to 3.4% for November 2019 to January 2020, the highest in more than three years

B. Tourism and related sectors[9,10,11,12]
• A number of events were postponed or cancelled in the second half of 2019 (e.g. the National Day Fireworks Display, Hong Kong Tennis Open and Hong Kong Wine & Dine Festival) • The overall visitor arrivals in the third quarter of 2019 plunged by 26% from those of a year earlier, the sharpest year-on-year fall since the second quarter of 2003 • Tourism business, convention and exhibition services domain decreased sharply by 27.8%, the largest year-on-year decline since the SARS episode in 2003 • Retail, accommodation and food services business dropped by 17.5%, 19.1% and 11.7% respectively in the third quarter.

6 Government Press Releases (2020-03-02). Law and order situation in 2019. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202003/02/P2020030200619.htm?fontSize=1

7 Hong Kong Police Force. Crime statistics in detail. Retrieved from https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_en/09_statistics/csd.html

8 Census and Statistics Department (2020-01-18). Unemployment and underemployment statistics for November 2019 - January 2020 [18 Feb 2020]. Retrieved from https://www.censtatd.gov.hk/press_release/pressReleaseDetail.jsp?charsetID=1&pressRID=4611

9 Census and Statistics Department (2020-01-18). Unemployment and underemployment statistics for November 2019 - January 2020 [18 Feb 2020]. Retrieved from https://www.censtatd.gov.hk/press_release/pressReleaseDetail.jsp?charsetID=1&pressRID=4611

10 Government Press Releases (2019-11-20). LCQ12: Impacts of social disturbances on economy. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201911/20/P2019112000497.htm?fontSize=1

11 Ibid.

12 Government Press Releases (2019-12-18). LCQ4: Measures to support enterprises and employment. Retrieved from https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201912/18/P2019121800423.htm?fontSize=1

Vigilantism events (according to public information)

Date	Location	Details
1 July 2019	Admiralty	A Mandarin speaking male was suppressed by protesters for taking photos at scene[1]
7 July 2019	Mong Kok	Early hour of 8 July, a lady holding a mobile phone was suspected to be a police officer and was detained by a few protesters[2]
21 July 2019	Sheung Wan	During the clash with police in Western District, brawls broke out between protesters and drivers, one of whom was beaten up and windows of his van for livelihood were smashed[3]
22 July 2019	Tsuen Wan	A male, who was photographing protesters' siege of Legislative Councillor's office at Tsuen Fung Centre, was attacked by a group of people at scene[4]
3 August 2019	Mong Kok	A male was reported to be attacking people with glass bottles who was then detained by people/protesters with plastic bans[5]
5 August 2019	Tuen Mun	A motorcycle driver rushed to the roadblock set up by protesters, he was detained by protesters[6]
5 August 2019	North Point	A group of white clad with wooden poles had conflicts with protesters on street, protesters fought back[7]
11 August 2019	North Point	People in red clad were reported to be attacking a male and a reporter in North Point, and a few persons were attacked by people in white clad around midnight of 12 Aug[8]
13 August 2019	Hong Kong International Airport	Detained and assaulted a traveller and a reporter, obstructed ambulance crews from reaching the injured[9]
20 August 2019	Tseung Kwan O	Three persons were attacked by a middle-aged male with knife while they were viewing Lennon Wall at a pedestrian underpass in Tseung Kwan O[10]
24 August 2019	Sham Shui Po	Protesters had fight with a white clad male of different stance[11]
25 August 2019	Tsuen Wan	Protesters were reported to be attacked by some white clad gang, they stopped a taxi which was found to have stored weapons, a blue clad male from the taxi was in turn attacked by protesters[12]
28 August 2019	Mei Foo	Dispute over Lennon Wall outside Lai Wan Market which led to beating and assault of several people[13]
14 September 2019	Ngau Tau Kok	Brawls at Amoy Plaza in Ngau Tau Kok in which some pro-establishment supporters were attacked[14]

Date	Location	Details
	Tin Shui Wai	Street quarrel between protesters and persons of different views in Tin Shui Wai[15]
	North Point	Two males were attacked by a group of blue clad supporters who were singing Chinese anthem in North Point[16]
	Quarry Bay	Dispute of people over Lennon Wall outside Quarry Bay MTR Station which involved fighting of a group of blue-clad people and people in black[17]
15 September 2019	Wan Chai	A blue clad male was reportedly assaulted by protesters in Wan Chai[18]
	North Point	A middle-aged male was reportedly assaulted by protesters in North Point[19]
16 September 2019	San Po Kong	Dispute over Lennon Wall at Ning Yuen Street, San Po Kong, a man was injured[20]
22 September 2019	Yuen Long	Five males were injured over separate incidents of allegedly harassing a female voluntary first-aider at scene, quarrelling with protesters while appearing drunken, and removing papers from a Lennon Wall set up by protesters[21]
27 September 2019	Central	A male and a female were sprayed paint and hit on the face for allegedly photographing female protesters with his mobile phone during a rally at Edinburgh Place and for tearing off posters from Lennon Wall nearby respectively[22]
29 September 2019	Causeway Bay	A white clad Mandarin-speaking male passing by a protest site was attacked on the head after being suspected by protesters as a trouble-maker[23]; windows of a taxi were smashed and its interior and engine were destroyed by protesters as the taxi driver was allegedly ramming the vehicle to a group of people on Hennessy Road in Causeway Bay[24]
4 October 2019	Central	A Mandarin-speaking JP Morgan employee was punched in the face by a protester for saying "We are all Chinese" outside the company's office at Chater House in Central[25]
	Sham Shui Po	A white clad male holding knife/steel ruler-like object reportedly had a fight with outnumbered protesters and sustained injury on the head while the incident took place near a fire engine in Sham Shui Po[26]. A blue clad middle-aged male was reportedly attacking a face-masked male with two axes, who was in turn attacked by a group of protesters with poles and bamboo sticks[27]
6 October 2019	Sham Shui Po	A taxi allegedly rushed on pavement in Sham Shui Po causing injuries to three persons; the taxi driver was beaten by people at scene[28]

Date	Location	Details
	Mong Kok	A male, who was reportedly holding a pole and attacking protesters at Nathan Road near HSBC branch in Mong Kok, was found lying on ground with blood on his head as protesters counter-attacked him on two counts[29]
	Mong Kok	An actress was attacked by protesters in Mong Kok while filming people vandalising a Bank of China automated teller machine (ATM) with her mobile phone[30]
	Mong Kok	Early on this day, a male passer-by who was removing road blocks at Nathan Road and Argyle Street in Mong Kok was reportedly quarrelling with and attacked by protesters[31]
13 October 2019	Mong Kok	A 49-year-old lady, who was moving roadblocks at Argyle Street and Nathan Road junction, was sprayed paint and assaulted by two females in their 40s[32]
19 October 2019	Tai Po	A male, who were distributing Lennon Wall materials outside Tai Wo MTR Station, was stabbed in the torso by two males[33]
31 October 2019	Mong Kok	A man in white was attacked after he was said to be driving passed protesters at high speed at Argyle Road towards Tai Kok Tsui[34]
2 November 2019	Tsim Sha Tsui	Several violent conflicts occurred between masked rioters and bystanders, a female was spray-painted on Park Lane Shopper's Boulevard and three men were assaulted on Nathan Road near Haiphong Road[35];
	Mong Kok	A number of masked protesters assaulted two passers-by on two separate occasions in Mong Kok, one of the victims in Shantung Street had his clothes, trousers and even underwear stripped by masked protesters in front of the public[36]
3 November 2019	Tai Koo Shing	A fight over political differences in Taikoo Shing in which a District Councillor had part of his left ear bitten off and the suspect was in turn beaten by people at scene[37]
9 November 2019	Tseung Kwan O	A male was confined and attacked by protesters following a dispute over noises of protesters' memorial at Beverly Garden for a university student who passed away after fallen from height in a carpark nearby[38]
11 November 2019	Ma On Shan	A 57-year-old male was poured with suspected inflammable liquid and set on fire following an argument with a group of people in Ma On Shan[39]
	Sha Tin	A motorcycle delivery driver has his vehicle vandalised after it allegedly rushed to the road blocks set up by protesters at Tai Chung Kiu Road in Sha Tin[40]

Date	Location	Details
12 November 2019	Tai Po	A lorry was set on fire and the driver was snatched from the vehicle after it had allegedly crashed road blocks at protest site while passing Tai Wo Road[41]
13 November 2019	Sheung Shui	A 70-year-old cleaner was reported to be hit in the head by a brick during a fight between two groups of people outside North District Town Hall, leading to death on the next day[42]
1 December 2019	Mong Kok	A male who was clearing barrier objects was hit by a drain cover[43]
9 December 2019	Mong Kok	A male allegedly had a quarrel with protesters at Sai Yeung Choi Street South and Shan Tung Street junction and was hit was a torch and fell in unconscious state[44]
24 December 2019	Mong Kok	Three males were reportedly attacked in different spots near Shan Tung Street and Dundas Street in Mong Kok over quarrels with protesters and allegedly indecent conduct to a person at protest scene[45]
26 Jan 2020	Mong Kok	A 37-year-old male Mainlander was attacked by protesters outside Langham Place, Portland Street; Police said three males were assaulted in the incident[46]
30 January 2020	Yuen Long	6 persons viewing Lennon Wall materials near Yuen Long West Station were reportedly to be attacked by some 10 males[47]

1 https://www.hk01.com/突發/346773/逃犯條例-被揭發近距離拍攝示威者-一男掟手機另一男速逃

2 https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1045052/即時-香港-尖沙嘴遊行-女子被誤認便衣遭包圍搶手機-3男女被捕
http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/text/2019/0710/317391.html

3 https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190722/bkn-20190722231847003-0722_00822_001.html
https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3019484/protesters-spill-beyond-end-point-third-major-march-against

4 https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/433686/逃犯條例-涉-私了-拍攝男子-中年漢被控-還押候訊 ；
http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0723/323858.html

5 https://www.hk01.com/政情/359855/旺角再遊行-警方稱-忍讓-克制-譴責示威者四處破壞
https://hk.appledaily.com/local/20190803/QUNZA3YWHO6GYSUAQ4FCDMRRLI/

6 https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/8-5-衝突-無綫-男子遭制服-索帶綁手腳-疑因駕電單車撞示威者路障-揮鋼棍/

7 https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=358083
https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=358098

8 http://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=106170

9 https://topick.hket.com/article/2426573/建制派嚴厲譴責示威者機場行私刑%E3%80%80強調非公民逮捕

10 https://yp.scmp.com/article/113946/knife-attack-near-lennon-wall-tseung-kwan-o-leaves-three-injured

11 https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/367644/觀塘遊行-深水埗衝突-示威者打白衣男-混亂間有人亮菜刀
https://www.worldjournal.com/6471840/article-暴力升級？警2天逮86人：示威者也襲擊不同意見市/

12 https://www.speakout.hk/港人花生/47947/-荃葵青遊行-多人疑持械襲擊示威者-藍衣漢反被圍毆受傷 https://hk.nextmgz.com/article/2_689796_0

13 https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190829/s00001/1567083878369/美孚連儂牆打架警拘 3 人-男子索帶綑綁他人涉非法禁錮被捕

14 https://hongkongfp.com/2019/09/14/brawls-malls-clashes-streets-pro-china-groups-confront-protesters/

15 https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1591360/即時-港聞-修例風波-天水圍堵路示威者大部分散去-持不同意見女子爆口角

16 https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1591201/即時-港聞-修例風波-北角藍衣人聚集唱國歌拆連儂牆-多人被圍遇襲-片段

17 http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1091258/即時-香港-修例風波-涉毆鬥藍衣群眾離去-炮台山反修例人士重整-連儂牆

18 https://www.hk01.com/突發/375523/逃犯條例-藍衣男子灣仔與示威者口角-遭數十人圍毆至重傷

19 https://www.hk01.com/突發/375512/逃犯條例-挑釁示威者遭圍毆-中年漢頭破血流稱後悔-我飲大咗

20 https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1480937-20190917.htm

21 https://www.hk01.com/18 區新聞/377921/9-21 元朗示威-一晚四-私了-五男被指非禮-挑釁頭破血流?itm_source=universal_search&itm_campaign=universal_search&itm_content=articles&itm_medium=web

22 https://www.hk01.com/突發/380272/9-27 集會-兩男女疑撕紙拍大頭相-遭集會人士-私了-黑漆噴面?itm_source=universal_search&itm_campaign=universal_search&itm_content=articles&itm_medium=web

23 https://www.hk01.com/突發/380758/9-29 遊行-全日 48 人受傷一人嚴重-趙聿修紀念中學中六生被捕

24 https://www.ejinsight.com/eji/article/id/2263212/20190930-march-turns-into-bloody-clashes-between-protesters-and-police

25 https://www.scmp.com/news/china/society/article/3031708/attack-jpmorgan-banker-hong-kong-sparks-outrage-mainland-china

26 https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/被指未阻示威者-私了-刀手-消防處-處理暴力經驗不足-未能確保在安全情況下協助/

27 https://www.hk01.com/突發/382570/禁蒙面法-大埔雙斧大叔-長沙灣道鐵尺男-遭示威者-私了

28 http://www.orangenews.hk/news/system/2019/10/06/010128194.shtml

29 https://www.hk01.com/突發/382910/禁蒙面法-深水埗的士撞人-旺角男子被二度-私了-大字型攤路

30 https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/馬蹄露旺角影相惹示威者不滿-受襲頭部流血痛哭/

31 https://www.hk01.com/突發/382767/禁蒙面法-示威者旺角設路障-過路男圖移走遭-私了

32 https://today.line.me/hk/pc/article/旺角有女子與示威者口角繼而被追打-aj0XRo ; https://www.speakout.hk/焦點新聞/49634/-私了-處處-旺角女搬走路障-遭示威者噴黑面部兼扯髮

33 https://www.hk01.com/突發/388108/大埔血案-男子連儂牆派傳單-被刺肚傷口見腸-刀手被捕

34 https://today.line.me/hk/pc/article/修例風波%EF%BC%9A 疑在港鐵旺角站口縱火%E3%80%80 白衣男遭「私了」-O99oXv

35 https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/5353611-內地女生尖沙咀與示威者口角-遭男子噴黑漆後送院

36 https://www.hk01.com/突發/393757/11-2 集會-旺角兩男遭-私了-一人遭扯開內褲-警-令人髮指

37 https://www.hk01.com/政情/393937/太古城血案全實錄-趙家賢耳朵遭監生咬甩-地面遺殘肉

38 https://www.hk01.com/突發/396389/悼念周梓樂-富康花園男子舌戰示威者-遭-私了-5 分鐘

39 https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2495673/被淋液放火燒%20 馬鞍山男變「火人」%20 曾與黑衣人拉扯追逐%202 級燒傷危殆

40 https://www.hk01.com/突發/396368/悼念周梓樂-沙田外賣鐵騎高速過路障衝人群-遭-私了-扑車

41 https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20191112/bkn-20191112063435912-1112_00822_001.html

42 https://www.hk01.com/18 區新聞/398414/11-13 上水-清潔工疑遭黑衣人擲磚掟中-搶救逾一日證實不治

43 https://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-12/02/content_1167485.html

44 https://www.hk01.com/突發/407596/12-8-旺角-警午夜前後拘捕多人-一男子疑被-私了-受傷

45 https://www.hk01.com/突發/413907/平安夜-旺角-男子疑遭-私了-大量出血倒地昏迷

46 https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3047723/hong-kong-protests-tear-gas-fired-second-night-row

47 https://www.hk01.com/突發/428233/連儂牆-元朗西鐵站看-文宣-遭多人揮棍圍毆-六男女受傷送院

ANNEX 2

LIST OF REPORTED POEs FROM JUNE 2019 TO FEBRUARY 2020

(The information contained below is accurate to the best of knowledge of the IPCC based on the information gathered from news reports and media coverage)

Date	Incident	Location / area(s)	Description
June 2019			
6 Jun 2019 (Thu)	Silent procession by members of the legal sector	Central - Admiralty	More than 2 500 joined the procession according to the organiser, 880 at peak according to police.
9 Jun 2019 (Sun)	"Safeguard Hong Kong, No extradition to China" procession (「守護香港反送中」大遊行)	Causeway Bay - Admiralty	A procession organised by CHRF. According to CHRF, 1.03 million joined the procession. Police counted that there were 240 000 participants at peak. Around midnight, hundreds of violent protesters charged on the police cordon line at the LegCo Complex. They threw iron rods, metal barriers and other hard objects at the Police. The police officers used batons, OC Foam and PAVA solution to hold back the violent protesters.

12 Jun 2019 (Wed)	Protests outside CGC and LegCo Complex	Admiralty	The day scheduled for the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill. In the morning, tens of thousands of protesters gathered in CGC area paralysing the traffic network. LegCo Secretariat later announced that the meeting for the Second Reading would be postponed. Clashes broke out between protesters and Police near the LegCo Complex in the afternoon. Some protesters threw bricks and other hard objects at the Police. The Police fired tear gas and less lethal projectiles, and declared the situation a riot.
14 Jun 2019 (Fri)	Hong Kong Mothers' Anti-Extradition Rally (「香港媽媽反送中集氣大會」)	Central	A rally at Chater Garden urging for withdrawing the Fugitive Offenders Bill and expressing concern on Police use of force on 12 June. 6 000 joined the rally according to the organiser. The Police counted that there were 980 participants at peak.
16 Jun 2019 (Sun)	"Condemn Suppression, Withdraw the Evil Law" procession (「譴責鎮壓·撤回惡法」大遊行)	Causeway Bay - Admiralty	A procession organised by CHRF. According to CHRF, two million people joined the procession. The Police counted that there were 338 000 at peak. The procession concluded peacefully at CGC without any clashes.

21 Jun 2019 (Fri)	Rally at the LegCo Complex	Admiralty - Wan Chai	A rally organised by the Federation of Students and five university student unions. More than a thousand people gathered at the LegCo Complex in the morning. They later escalated their action by blocking the eastbound and westbound lanes of Harcourt Road.
	First Siege of PHQ	Wan Chai	After the rally at the LegCo Complex, protesters proceeded to PHQ and laid siege to it, with thousands of people at its peak. The Police stood guard inside PHQ and allowed the protesters to disperse in their own time.
26 Jun 2019 (Wed)	"G20 Free Hong Kong" rally at Edinburgh Place	Central - Admiralty	A rally launched by CHRF. About 10 000 joined the rally according to the organiser.
	Second siege of PHQ	Wan Chai	After the CHRF rally, over a thousand people walked to PHQ and once again laid siege to it. Most of the people left around midnight. In the small hours of the following day, the Police dispersed around 200 protesters remaining at PHQ in the direction of Wan Chai.
30 Jun 2019 (Sun)	Rally in support of the police and rule of law (「撐警隊，護法治，保安寧」集會)	Admiralty	A rally organised by Dr Hon Junius Ho and Politihk Social Strategic at Tamar Park to support the Police. According to the organiser, 165 000 joined the rally. The Police figure was 53 000 at peak.

July 2019			
1 Jul 2019 (Mon)	July 1 Procession	Causeway Bay - Admiralty	The procession was organised by CHRF, about 530 000 joined according to organiser; 190 000 at peak according to police. Violent protesters later vandalised LegCo with a subsequent cost of $40 million for repairs.
6 Jul 2019 (Sat)	Procession "Reclaim Tuen Mun Park" (「光復屯門公園」遊行)	Tuen Mun	A few thousand protesters marched against the nuisance caused by some people at Tuen Mun Park. A few hundred protesters surrounded Tuen Mun Police Station and occupied the roads outside.
7 Jul 2019 (Sun)	Grand procession in Kowloon (「九龍區大遊行」)	Tsim Sha Tsui, West Kowloon Station, Mong Kok	Tens of thousands of protesters marched from Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station to promote their cause to Mainland visitors. After procession, thousands of protesters went "shopping" in Mong Kok where clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action.
13 Jul 2019 (Sat)	Procession with a theme "To Liberate Sheung Shui" (「光復上水」行動)	Sheung Shui	The organiser estimated a turnout of 30 000 while the Police counted 4 000 at the peak. After the march, clashes broke out between the protesters and the Police.

14 Jul 2019 (Sun)	Sha Tin Procession (「沙田區大遊行」) descending into violent clashes in New Town Plaza	Sha Tin	The organiser of the march estimated 115 000 participated while Police counted 28 000 at the peak. Clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action. Chaotic scenes were seen at New Town Plaza.
17 Jul 2019 (Wed)	Silent procession by "silver hair" group (「銀髮族靜默」遊行)	Central	About 9 000 participated according to organiser, 1 500 at peak according to police.
20 Jul 2019 (Sat)	"Safeguard Hong Kong" rally (「守護香港」大集會)	Admiralty	About 310 000 joined according to organiser, 100 000 at peak according to police.
21 Jul 2019 (Sun)	Hong Kong Island Procession	Causeway Bay - Admiralty - Sheung Wan	About 430 000 joined the procession according to organiser, 138 000 at peak according to police. Some protesters marched to the LOCPG and defaced the national emblem.
	Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long	A group of people dressed in white congregated at the Yuen Long MTR station, attacking protesters and targeting those in black.

26 Jul 2019 (Fri)	Mass sit-in at the HK International Airport (「和你飛」集會)	Hong Kong International Airport	Protesters distributed leaflets and displayed posters to inform travellers of their reasons for protest and to enlist support from the international community. About 15 000 participated according to organiser, 4 000 at peak according to police.
27 Jul 2019 (Sat)	Rally and recession for an event "Reclaim Yuen Long" (「光復元朗」)	Yuen Long	Protesters protested against the Yuen Long Incident on 21 July. About 288 000 attended according to organiser.
28 Jul 2019 (Sun)	Hong Kong Island Procession	Central - Sheung Wan	Participants of an authorised sit-in at Chater Garden diverted to Causeway Bay and Western District in the late afternoon. Some violent protesters had violent clashes in Sheung Wan with police officers.
August 2019			
1 Aug 2019 (Thu)	"Flash" protest organsied by members from the financial sectors	Central	To demonstrate against the Fugitive Offenders Bill.
2 Aug 2019 (Fri)	Rallies held by medical professionals and Civil Servants	Central	Around ten thousand participants joined the rally organised by medical professionals. Members from Civil Service sector gathered to demand an independent inquiry into recent incidents.

3 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Procession in Mong Kok (「旺角再遊行」)	Mong Kok - Tsim Sha Tsui, Hung Hom, Wong Tai Sin	The procession descended into protests in different directions to Yau Ma Tei, Tsim Sha Tsui, along with blocking of Cross-Harbour Tunnel, siege of police stations in Tsim Sha Tsui, Mong Kok.
4 Aug 2019 (Sun)	Procession in Tseung Kwan O and rally in Kennedy Town	Hong Kong Island (Kennedy Town, Sheung Wan, Causeway Bay) Kowloon (Tseung Kwan O, Kwun Tong, Wong Tai Sin, Hung Hom) New Territories (Tin Shui Wai)	Procession in Tseung Kwan O turned into conflicts between protesters and police. Rally in Western District spilling over to Causeway Bay. Flash mob, hit-and-run protests in multiple districts and locations. Protesters barricaded and placed various objects at the toll booths, paralysing the tunnel traffic. At night, hundreds of violent protesters staged another stand-off outside Wong Tai Sin Police Station, occasionally attacking with bricks and miscellaneous objects.

5 Aug 2019 (Mon)	General strike in 7 districts (「全港三罷、七區開花」)	Hong Kong Island Kowloon New Territories	Rallies at Tamar Park in Admiralty, MacPherson Playground in Mong Kok, Wong Tai Sin Square, Fung Shui Square in Tai Po, Sha Tin Town Hall, Tsuen Wan Park and Tuen Mun Park. Protesters resorted to urban guerrilla tactics in multiple districts in Hong Kong Island, Kowloon and the New Territories. Flash mob protests in various locations including Admiralty, Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui, Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, Cross-Harbour Tunnel etc. Protesters barricaded and placed various objects at the toll booths, paralysing the tunnel traffic.
6 Aug 2019 (Tue)	Siege of Sham Shui Po Police Station	Sham Shui Po	A student union leader was arrested for possession of offensive weapons. Protesters besieged the police station to support the student.
7 Aug 2019 (Wed)	Protesters gathered at Hong Kong Space Museum	Tsim Sha Tsui	Hundreds of protesters gathered at Hong Kong Space Museum and shone their laser pointers on the egg-shaped dome of the museum in protest against the arrest of the Student Union President of Hong Kong Baptist University (HKBU).

9 Aug 2019 (Fri)	A three-day mass sit-in protest at the arrival halls of the HK International Airport was launched (「萬人接機」機場集會)	Hong Kong International Airport	Several thousands joined the sit-in.
10 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Protests in various locations	New Territories (Tai Wai, Sha Tin, Tai Po, Kwai Chung, Tsuen Wan) Kowloon (Tsim Sha Tsui, Hung Hom, Kowloon Bay, Kwun Tong, Tsuen Wan and Kowloon Tong)	Multiple 'flash mob' style protests erupted across the city (Tai Po, Tai Wai, Hung Hom etc.) with protesters emerging from the MTR system, blocking a number of thoroughfares including Cross-Harbour Tunnel.
11 Aug 2019 (Sun)	"Flash" protests in various locations	Hong Kong Island (Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, North Point, Tai Koo, Sai Wan Ho)Kowloon (Sham Shui Po, Cheung Sha Wan, Tsim Sha Tsui, Mei Foo, Kowloon Tong)New Territories (Kwai Fong, Kwai Fong)	Police fired tear gas at Kwai Fong Station and pepper balls at Tai Koo Station. A female sustained injuries in her right eye allegedly caused by the Police outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station.

12 Aug 2019 (Mon)	Rally and blocking of arrival halls and check-in/departure passageways at the Hong Kong International Airport (「警察還眼」)	Hong Kong International Airport	Protesters aimed to paralyse the airport operations and protest at the escalation of violence over 10-11 August. By 4pm all departure flights were cancelled.
	Grievance against police operation	Tai Koo MTR Station	About a hundred people gathered in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against Police operations at the station on 11 August 2019.
13 Aug 2019 (Tue)	Protest at the Airport continued	Hong Kong International Airport	The protest ended in scenes of chaos in the evening as protesters assaulted and detained two mainland Chinese males, obstructed ambulance and confronted police outside the terminal.
16 Aug 2019 (Fri)	Rally "Stand With Hong Kong Power to the People" (「英美港盟，主權在民」)	Central	It was organised by Hong Kong Higher Institutions International Affairs Delegation (香港大專學界國際事務代表團) and a LIHKG discussion forum group「我要攬炒」. About 60 000 attended according to organiser, 7 100 at peak according to police.
17 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Public procession (「光復紅土遊行」)	To Kwa Wan, Whampoa	Several thousands joined the procession.

18 Aug 2019 (Sun)	Rally at Victoria Park	Causeway Bay - Admiralty	Due to large crowd, participants occupied carriageways of Causeway Road and Hennessy Road after leaving the public meeting venue. About 1.7 million participated according to organiser, 128 000 at peak according to police.
20 Aug 2019 (Tue)	Grievance against police operation	Tai Koo MTR Station	About a hundred people gathered again in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against Police Operation at the station on 11 August 2019.
21 Aug 2019 (Wed)	Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long MTR Station	A thousand protesters assembled at Yuen Long Station in commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident.
23 Aug 2019 (Fri)	Protest by forming human chains "Hong Kong Way"	Various locations	Along MTR lines from Kennedy Town to Causeway Bay, from Kowloon Tong to Yau Ma Tei, along the Tsim Sha Tsui harbourfront, and from Tsuen Wan to Lai King, as well as further east along the Kwun Tong line. About 210 000 participated in 60 km for the "Hong Kong Way"
24 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Public procession and meeting in Kwun Tong	Kowloon Tong, Sham Shui Po, Wong Tai Sin, Kwun Tong	More than 1 000 joined the procession. Some protesters caused damage to the smart lamppost in Kowloon Bay.

25 Aug 2019 (Sun)	Public meetings and procession in Kwai Tsing	New Territories (Kwai Tsing, Tsuen Wan)	Public events in Tsuen Wan descended into violent clashes between the police and protesters. Police deployed water cannon for the first time in Tsuen Wan and a warning shot was fired.
28 Aug 2019 (Wed)	Rally to protest against sexual violence of police force (「反送中 #Metoo 集會」)	Central	More than 30 000 joined the #Metoo rally according to organiser, 11 000 at peak according to police.
31 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Unauthorised procession on Hong Kong Island, protests and clashes in various locations	Hong Kong Island (Central, Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, North Point) Kowloon (Yau Tsim Mong, Wong Tai Sin, Kwun Tong, Hang Hau)	Protests on Hong Kong Island without LoNO. Protests extended to various districts including North Point, Tsim Sha Tsui, Mong Kok, Wong Tai Sin, Kwun Tong and Chai Wan. Police entered the Prince Edward Station and took arrest actions.
September 2019			
1 Sep 2019 (Sun)	"Fly to Freedom" 2.0 (「和你飛 2.0」)	Hong Kong International Airport, Tung Chung	Protesters blocked and vandalised roads outside Hong Kong International Airport and nearby Tung Chung area including MTR station.
2 Sep 2019 (Mon)	Rally on general strike of cross sectors, class boycotts started in secondary schools and universities	Various locations	3 000 according to the organiser for the sit-in assembly in CUHK. 40 000 according to organiser for the general strike rally.

5 Sep 2019 (Thu)	"Human Chain" events	Various locations	Secondary students from various schools joined their hands to form "Human chains".
7 Sep 2019 (Sat)	"Fly to Freedom" 3.0 (「和你飛 3.0」)	Hong Kong International Airport	Protesters called for another traffic disruption at the Airport.
8 Sep 2019 (Sun)	Rally and procession to the U.S. Consulate General (「香港人權與民主祈禱會」)	Central - Causeway Bay	To urge the US congress to pass Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act.
9-13 Sep 2019 (Mon-Fri)	Widespread line-up of human chains, mass signing of the protest theme song "Glory to Hong Kong" (願榮光歸香港)	Various locations	
15 Sep 2019 (Sun)	Procession which was objected by the police	Causeway Bay - Central	Procession led to clashes outside Central Government Offices and LegCo, some protesters set fire at multiple locations in Central and Admiralty.
21 Sep 2019 (Sat)	Yuen Long sit-in rally	Yuen Long	A sit-in for the two-month of the Yuen Long Incident, which ended with a night of tear gas and petrol bombs.
	Public procession "Reclaim Tuen Tuen Mun Park" (「光復屯門公園」遊行)	Tuen Mun	Tuen Mun protest turned into conflicts between police and protesters. Police fired rounds of tear gas and sponge grenades.

27 Sep 2019 (Fri)	Rally in support of arrestees who had been detained at San Uk Ling Holding Centre (「聲援新屋嶺被捕者集會」)	Central	About 50 000 participated according to organiser, 9 520 at peak according to police.
28 Sep 2019 (Sat)	Rally organised by CHRF (「反抗威權迎接黎明」)	Admiralty - Causeway Bay	To commemorate the Occupy Central Movement in 2014.
29 Sep 2019 (Sun)	Protest on anti-totalitarianism (「929 全球反極權」大遊行)	Hong Kong Island (Causeway Bay - Central)	It led to clashes in Central District. An Indonesian reporter was injured on her right eye by a police rubber bullet in Wan Chai. A warning shot was fired by the Police.
October 2019			
1 Oct 2019 (Tue)	"National Grief March" on Hong Kong Island (「沒有國慶 只有國殤」遊行) and Protests in six districts (「六區開花」)	Various locations (including Causeway Bay, Wan Chai, Admiralty, Central, Wong Tai Sin, Sham Shui Po, Mong Kok, Sha Tin, Tuen Mun, Tsuen Wan, etc.)	Despite the Police's refusal of CHRF's application for launching the march, thousands of protesters marched from Causeway Bay to Central in the afternoon. Meanwhile, violent protests were held in various districts across the city. Clashes between protesters and the Police were the most ferocious and extensive since 12 Oct 2019. First injury case by live bullet fired by police in Tsuen Wan.

04 Oct 2019 (Fri) - 5 Oct 2019 (Sat)	Protests in various districts against the Anti-mask Law	Various locations (including Causeway Bay, Sha Tin, Mong Kok, Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Yuen Long, etc.)	On 4 Oct 2019, the HKSAR Government announced that the "Anti-mask Law" would come into effect on 5 Oct 2019. Citywide violent protests in opposition to the new law were held in various districts. Second injury case by live bullet fired by police in Yuen Long on 4 Oct 2019.
6 Oct 2019 (Sun)	Two unauthorized Anti-mask Law protests in Kowloon and on Hong Kong Island (「九龍革命，港島起義」)	Various locations (including Causeway Bay, Central, Admiralty, Tsim Sha Tsui, Mong Kok, Kowloon Tong and Sham Shui Po etc.)	Protesters on Hong Kong Island marched from Causeway Bay to Central while those in Kowloon marched from Tsim Sha Tsui to Sham Shui Po. Protesters blocked major roads at multiple locations and vandalised -MTR stations and shops with links to the Mainland. MTR Corporation suspended all service for the very first time.
7 Oct 2019 (Mon)	Protests against the Anti-mask Law	Various locations including Mong Kok, Tai Po, Ma On Shan and Tseung Kwan O	Sporadic protests in opposition to the Anti-mask Law continued in a number of locations.
10 Oct 2019 (Thu)	Protest on "World Sight Day"	Tsim Sha Tsui	Protesters gathered outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station in support of a woman who suffered from eye injury in the protest on 11 Aug 2019.

12 Oct 2019 (Sat)	Unauthorized protest against the Anti-mask Law	Tsim Sha Tsui to Sham Shui Po	Protesters held an unauthorized protest from Tsim Sha Tsui to Sham Shui Po against the Anti-mask law.
13 Oct 2019 (Sun)	Territory-wide Shopping Malls Protests (「18 區開花」行動)	Various locations (including Central, Kwun Tong, Tuen Mun, Tsuen Wan, Sha Tin, Mong Kok etc.)	Protesters deployed flashmob strategy by popping up at major shopping malls in different districts to vandalize shops and MTR stations. A protester slashed an officer's neck in Kwun Tong.
14 Oct 2019 (Mon)	Protests in Central and Tiu King Leng	Central and Tiu King Leng	An assembly was held in Chater Garden in Central calling for the US to enact the "Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act". Crowds gathered in VTC in Tiu King Leng to urge the campus management to release the CCTV footage relating to the VTC student incident
18 Oct 2019 (Fri)	"Human chain" protests	Various districts including Causeway Bay, Sha Tin, Tsuen Wan, etc.	Protesters formed human chains across the city and chanted protest slogans.

20 Oct 2019 (Sun)	Unauthorised protest in Tsim Sha Tsui	Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station	Despite the Police's refusal of CHRF's application for launching the protest, thousands of protesters participated in the protest from Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station, which later turned into clashes and vandalised acts in a number of areas in Kowloon. Water cannon sprayed blue-dyed water at Kowloon Mosque.
21 Oct 2019 (Mon)	Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long, Causeway, Mong Kok, Tseung Kwan O, Tai Wai MTR stations	To mark the 3rd month commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident at various MTR stations.
24 Oct 2019 (Thu)	Protest in Chater Garden	Central	A rally was held to support protesters in Catalonia, Spain.
26 Oct 2019 (Sat)	Rally at Chater Garden	Central	Hundreds of medical professionals gathered in Central to protest against alleged Police violence.
27 Oct 2019 (Sun)	Unauthorised assembly in Tsim Sha Tsui(「追究警暴，守護清真寺，守護民眾記者」集會)	Tsim Sha Tsui - Mong Kok, Sham Shui Po, Whampoa, Kwun Tong	The rally in Tsim Sha Tsui soon turned into violent clashes between protesters and the Police. Some protesters moved to other districts blocking roads and vandalizing properties.
31 Oct 2019 (Thur)	Assembly outside Prince Edward MTR station	Kowloon (Prince Edward, Kowloon Bay)	To mark the 2nd month commemoration of the Prince Edward Station Incident.

November 2019			
2 Nov 2019 (Sat)	Protests on Hong Kong Island and Tsim Sha Tsui	Hong Kong Island (Causeway Bay, Wan Chai, Central) Kowloon (Mong Kok and Tsim Sha Tsui)	Office of Xinhua News Agency in Wan Chai was attacked for the first time, with its glass doors and windows smashed and lobby set on fire.
3 Nov 2019 (Sun)	7-district "street-wandering" protest (「七區行街」反對警方濫暴)	Various locations (Sha Tin, Tai Po, Tuen Mun, Wong Tai Sin, Diamond Hill, Taikoo Shing, Tseung Kwan O)	Some protesters vandalised the MTR facilities and selected shops, prompting the early closure of a few large shopping malls.
4 Nov 2019 (Mon)	Confrontation between protesters and police over a police officer's wedding	Tseung Kwan O	An HKUST student sustained fatal injuries after falling from height in Tseung Kwan O.
5 Nov 2019 (Tue)	Protests in Tsim Sha Tsui and Tseung Kwan O	Tseung Kwan O	For protest in Tsim Sha Tsui, it was to mark the one-month of anti-mask regulation. For the one in Tseung Kwan O, it was about protest against police operation on 4 November in relation to a HKUST student's fall.
8 Nov 2019 (Fri)	Protests in relation to the death of the HKUST Student	Causeway Bay, Yau Ma Tei, Mong Kok, Tuen Mun, Tseung Kwan O, Whampoa, Tsuen Wan	The HKUST student was certified death that morning.

10 Nov 2019 (Sun)	“Shopping mall” rallies and protests in various locations	Various shopping malls in Sha Tin, Kowloon Tong, Hang Hau, Tsuen Wan, Tuen Mun, Causeway Bay	Protesters loitered in several malls, vandalised shops and facilities therein.
11 Nov 2019 (Mon)	Citywide "all-in strike" campaign (「三罷行動」) leading to disruptions and clashes in various locations The early actions to cause traffic disruptions was coined "Dawn Action" (「黎明行動」)	Various locations with particular focus in Sai Wan Ho, Sha Tin (CUHK campus), Kwai Fong, Causeway Bay, Mong Kok	A 21-year-old man was shot by a police officer in Sai Wan Ho. Police entered university campuses for arrest and dispersal operation. A violent protester poured gasoline on a man and set him on fire after he chastised a group of masked protesters vandalising Ma On Shan MTR Station.
12 Nov 2019 (Tue)	Continuation of citywide general strike and "Daybreak Action" advancing start time at 6.30am (「破曉行動」) Clashes at CUHK Protests in other areas to save "CUHK" (「圍魏救趙」行動)	Various locations with particular focus in Kowloon Tong (CityU and HKBU campuses), Pokfulam (HKU main campus), Mong Kok, Hung Hom (PolyU campus), Central, Kwun Tong, Sha Tin (CUHK campus), Mong Kok and Tai Po	Clashes on and near Bridge No. 2 at entrance of CUHK. Highest number of tear gas, rubber rounds and beanbag rounds fired up to 12 November 2019.

13 Nov 2019 (Wed)	Continuation of citywide general strike and "Dagian Action" (「晨曦行動」) Clashes at CUHK	Various locations with particular focus in Sheung Shui, Tin Shui Wai, Kowloon Tong, Central, Sha Tin (CUHK)	High Court dismissed CUHK Student Union's application for an injunction to stop police from entering the Chinese University campus without a search warrant or the university's consent. In Sheung Shui, a 70-year-old cleaning worker was reported to be hit in the head by a brick hurled from a group believed to be violent protesters in the midst of a confrontation between the violent protesters and a group of local residents. The man died on 14 November 2019.
14 Nov 2019 (Thu)	Continuation of citywide general strike and "Twilight Action" (「曙光行動」)	Various locations with particular focus in Sha Tin, Kowloon Tong, Tsim Sha Tsui, Hung Hon, Central	Clashes at university campuses continued.
15 Nov 2019 (Fri)	Continuation of citywide general strike and "Sunrise Action" (「旭日行動」)	Various locations particular focus in Aberdeen, Yuen Long, Tseung O, Hung Hom, Mong Kok	Clashes between protesters and police continued.
16 Nov 2019 (Sat)	Clashes near PolyU and nearby Tsim Sha Tsui area	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	Clashes between protesters and police in Tsim Sha Tsui, near PolyU campus, black-clad protesters lobbed petrol bombs at advancing lines of police on Chatham Road South.

17 Nov 2019 (Sun)	Clashes near PolyU campus continued Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	Main buildings of PolyU campus were reportedly fortified by protesters. Police besieged PolyU campus from 17 November night.
18 Nov 2019 (Mon)	Clashes near PolyU campus continued Siege of PolyU Protests in Yau Tsim Mong area outside PolyU (「圍魏救趙」行動)	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom, Yau Ma Tei, Tsim Sha Tsui, Mong Kok	Police dispersal and arrest operation from mid-night to early morning at PolyU, while people on the campus launched attacks with petrol bombs and setting fires. Highest number of tear gas, rubber rounds and beanbag rounds fired. Protesters called for rescuing protesters at PolyU by launching protests in Yau Tsim Mong area outside PolyU.
	High Court ruled that the anti-mask regulation was unconstitutional and "exceeds what is reasonably necessary to achieve the aim of law enforcement		

19 Nov 2019 (Tue)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	Police said they have seized over 3 900 petrol bombs at CUHK campus, and collected evidence after the university management reported theft of dangerous chemicals from laboratories.
20 Nov 2019 (Wed)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	Protesters at PolyU tried to leave on their means than to surrender to police, through sewage system and by zip-lining. All voluntary medics/first aiders have reportedly left PolyU campus by the night of 20 November.
21 Nov 2019 (Thu)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	About 50-100 protesters reportedly remained on PolyU campus which has been besieged by police since 17 November.
	Silent sit-in at YoHo Mall near Yuen Long MTR station	Yuen Long	To mark the 4th month of the Yuen Long Incident.
22 Nov 2019 (Fri)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	
23 Nov 2019 (Sat)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	
24 Nov 2019 (Sun)	Siege of PolyU		People trapped inside PolyU campus accused the police of stripping them of their right to vote.
	District Council Election polling date		
25 Nov 2019 (Mon)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	PolyU management issued statements to appeal people to leave.

26 Nov 2019 (Tue)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	PolyU management has formed a working group to persuade the remaining people to leave the campus as soon as possible.
27 Nov 2019 (Wed)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	
28 Nov 2019 (Thu)	Thanksgiving Day Rally at Edinburgh Place in Central	Hong Kong Island (Central)	To express gratitude to the US for passing the Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act into law.
	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	The Police and FSD entered PolyU for gathering evidence of crime/damage and handling hazardous chemicals. The cordon around PolyU was lifted the next day.
30 Nov 2019 (Sat)	Assembling outside Prince Edward MTR station	Kowloon (Prince Edward, Kowloon Bay)	To mark the 3rd month of the Prince Edward Station Incident.
December 2019			
1 Dec 2019 (Sun)	Public meetings and processions in various locations	Central, Tsim Sha Tsui, Whampoa, Mong Kok	For the procession started in Tsim Sha Tsui on the themed "Forget not our objective" (「毋忘初心」大遊行), the organiser estimated around 380 000 participated. The Police counted 16 000 at peak. At night, clashes erupted between protesters and the Police in Whampoa and Mong Kok.
2 Dec 2019 (Mon)	Rally in Chater Garden of advertising sector	Central	Over 1 000 advertising sector workers started a week-long strike with a rally in Chater Garden.

6 Dec 2019 (Fri)	"Lunch with you" protest (「和你Lunch」) in various locations	Central, Tai Koo, Cheung Sha Wan, San Po Kong, Kwun Tong	"Lunch with you" in Central, Cheung Sha Wan, Tai Koo, San Po Kong and Kwun Tong.
8 Dec 2019 (Sun)	"World Day of Human Rights Rally 2019" (「12.8 國際人權日」遊行)	Causeway Bay, Wan Chai, Central	The first Police approved CHRF POE since August 2019. CHRF estimated that around 800 000 participated, while the Police counted 183 000 at the peak.
9 Dec 2019 (Mon)	People advocated a general strike protest on 9 December morning causing traffic disruptions	Sha Tin, Tuen Mun, Fanling, Tai Po, Mong Kok	Police were present at various MTR stations in the morning, including Mong Kok and Tuen Mun.
12 Dec 2019 (Thu)	Rally in Edinburgh Place to mark six months of 12 June 2019	Central	Organiser estimated 43 000 participated in the Rally, while the Police counted 5 800 at peak.
15 Dec 2019 (Sun)	"Shopping with you" in various shopping malls	Shopping malls in various districts, e.g. Cityplaza, Harbour City, Metroplaza, New Town Plaza, Popcorn, Times Square	Protesters staged protests in several shopping malls, where they disrupted the operations of shops and restaurants.

20 Dec 2019 (Fri)	Protest in Central in support of Spark Alliance	Central	Some protesters gathered outside HSBC Headquarters at lunchtime to protest against the actions of HSBC and the Police in relation to Spark Alliance, a fund-raising platform for protesters. HSBC closed the account of Spark Alliance and the Police arrested four persons related to Spark Alliance in November and 19 December 2019 respectively.
21 Dec 2019 (Sat)	Protest in Yuen Long to mark five months of the Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long	Around a hundred protesters gathered at the Yoho Mall near Yuen Long Station. They chanted slogans and sang "Glory to Hong Kong".
22 Dec 2019 (Sun)	Rally in Edinburgh Place in support of the Muslim Uyghurs in Xinjiang	Central	Around 1 000 attended the rally according to the organiser. The rally ended in clashes between protesters and the Police after a National Flag was removed from City Hall nearby.
23 Dec 2019 (Mon)	Rally in Edinburgh Place in support of Spark Alliance	Central	The organiser estimated 45 000 joined the rally in Edinburgh Place, while the Police counted 3 300 at peak.
24 Dec 2019 (Tue)	"Shopping with you" in various shopping malls	Shopping malls in various districts, e.g. Harbour City, New Town Plaza, Time Square, Yoho Mall	Protesters chanted slogans and disrupted business deemed to be pro-Government or not supporting their actions. An HSBC branch in Mong Kok was targeted. Protesters smashed up glass doors and set up a fire inside the branch.

25 Dec 2019 (Wed)	"Shopping with you" in various shopping malls	Shopping malls in various districts, e.g. APM, Harbour City, New Town Plaza, Telford Plaza	Similar to the day before, protesters chanted slogans and disrupted business deemed to be pro-Government or not supporting their actions.
26 Dec 2019 (Thu)	"Shopping with you" in various shopping malls	Shopping malls in various districts, e.g. Harbour City, Langham Place, Sogo, Tai Po Mega Mall, Time Square, V City,	Similar to the day before, protesters chanted slogans and disrupted business deemed to be pro-Government or not supporting their actions.
31 Dec 2019 (Tue)	Protest outside Prince Edward Station	Prince Edward, Mong Kok	Protesters gathered at Prince Edward Station to mark four months of the Prince Edward Station Incident.
January 2020			
1 Jan 2020 (Wed)	New Year's Day procession "Keep our commitment, stand as one! ——2020 New Year Rally" (毋忘承諾，並肩同行——民陣元旦大遊行)	Causeway Bay - Central	It was organised by CHRF. Over 1.03 million joined according to organiser; 60 000 at peak according to police. The procession ended earlier about 5:30pm, some protesters vandalised shops and banks, some even set fire and spray-painted the lion sculptures of HSBC headquarters.
2 Jan 2020 (Thu)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Central	At about 1300, about 100 citizens gathered in and around Statue Square in Central. The crowd walked towards Pedder Street and disbanded at about 1345.

3 Jan 2020 (Fri)	Rally by professional teachers at Edinburgh Place (「無懼白色恐怖，堅守教師專業」)	Central	About 20 000 attended according to organiser, 2 500 at peak according to police.
5 Jan 2020 (Sun)	Procession against cross-border parallel trading activities in Sheung Shui (「和理行之不要水貨辦年貨」遊行)	Sheung Shui	About 10 000 joined according to organiser, 2 500 at peak according to police.
6 Jan 2020 (Mon)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Wan Chai, Causeway Bay	Protesters walked along Hennessy Road and Johnston Road. Some people raised banners and shouted slogans in common with the protests.
8 Jan 2020 (Wed)	Vigil in Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O	Tseung Kwan O	To mark the 2nd month commemoration of the death of the HKUST student.
12 Jan 2020 (Sun)	Protest calling on the international community to impose sanctions on Hong Kong government (「天下制裁集氣大會」)	Central	About 36 000 attended according to organise; 3 000 at peak according to police.

16 Jan 2020 (Thu)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Kwun Tong	The rally was held in the Tsun Yip Street Playground in Kwun Tong. A crowd of about 100 moved towards How Ming Street. A "Lunch with You/Write with You" campaign was also launched in Statue Square in Central.
17 Jan 2020 (Fri)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Cheung Sha Wan, San Po Kong, Lai Chi Kok	Protesters called a rally in Cheung Sha Wan and another in San Po Kong. About 30 people gathered in the parking lot of the Hong Kong Industrial Centre and about 50 gathered in Tai Yau Street. There were also about 70 protesters shouted "release the righteous" outside the Lai Chi Kok Reception Centre.
19 Jan 2020 (Sun)	Rally calling for global sanctions on Hong Kong officials who undermine human rights	Central	The organiser was asked to call off the rally around 4pm. During the protest, it was reported some protesters sprayed graffiti on a Bank of China building, set fires on roads, vandalised traffic lights.
21 Jan 2020 (Tue)	Video showing rally in vicinity of Yuen Long MTR Station and sit-in rallies in several MTR stations	Yuen Long MTR Station	To mark 6th month of the Yuen Long Incident. The night ended with police dispersed the crowd with pepper spray.
25 Jan 2020 (Sat)	Protest in memory of fourth year of Mong Kok riot	Mong Kok	Turned into clashes between police and protesters.

26 Jan 2020 (Sun)	Protest in memory of fourth year of "Fishball revolution" in Mong Kok (「魚蛋革命四周年」)	Mong Kok	Turned into clashes between police and protesters.
30 Jan 2020 (Thu)	Assembling of people outside Prince Edward Station in light of the Prince Edward Station Incident	Mong Kok	To mark the 5th month of the Prince Edward Station Incident.
February 2020			
3 Feb 2020 (Mon)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Central	More than a hundred people gathered inside the shopping mall of the International Financial Centre mall in Central to "Support Medical Strikes" so as to pressurise the Government to close the borders.
4 Feb 2020 (Tue)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Central	The event was held in Central to support the strike of medical professionals.
8 Feb 2020 (Sat)	Vigil in Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O	Tseung Kwan O	More than 100 people gathered at the parking lot of Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O to Commemorate the Death of the HKUST Student in November 2019.
19 Feb 2020 (Wed)	Vigil in Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O	Tseung Kwan O	About 70 people gathering on the ground floor of the parking lot in Sheung Tak Village, Tseung Kwan O to commemorate the death of the female VTC student.

21 Feb 2020 (Fri)	Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long YOHO Mall	Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident at various locations. In Yuen Long, about 200 people gathered at the atrium of the Yoho Mall in participation of the event.
29 Feb 2020 (Sat)	Protest in light of the Prince Edward Station Incident	Prince Edward - Mong Kok	Hundreds of protesters gathered at the Prince Edward Station. There were clashes between protesters and the Police.

ANNEX 3

USE OF INTERNET IN PROPELLING THE POEs

1. Social media play an important role in the POEs.[1] Digital media have served as a vital hub of information circulation for protesters. According to a survey published in March 2020 conducted by Centre for Communication and Public Opinion Survey, The Chinese University of Hong Kong, people often relies on online news media (over 80% to nearly 100%), Facebook (roughly 80% to 90%) and the online discussion forum LIHKG (roughly 50% to 90%) as sources of information about the movement against traditional media (roughly 40% to 60%)[2] Digital media also have served as a platform through which people can participate in the POEs. In particular, protesters often use different platforms such as Facebook, Telegram and LIHKG to distribute movement-related information and discuss issues.[3]

2. In general, protesters use online discussion forums such as LIHKG and messaging app such as Telegram for coordination and communication.[4] They use these forums and apps to share information, discuss tactics and evaluate the effectiveness of tactics after every protest.[5] LIHKG allows crowd ranking by pushing the most popular thread to the top.[6] Telegram groups can have up to 200 000 members and public channels can have unlimited number of subscribers.[7] These features of LIHKG and Telegram facilitate the discussion and dissemination of information. Protesters also recognise Twitter as a global platform to get the message out to audiences outside Hong Kong. While some people praised the artistic creativity of the publicity materials,[8] others criticised such materials as helping to promote

---

[1] 49% of those aged 15 to 34 regarded Telegram was important for getting information about the protests, while 61 per cent in that age group felt the LIHKG platform was important for such information. And about a fifth of those aged 55 and above also found Telegram and LIHKG.

SCMP (2019-10-12). Older Hongkongers taking to online apps and social media for latest updates on protests, and some may join rallies too. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3032496/older-hongkongers-taking-online-apps-and-social-media

[2] Research Report on Public Opinion during The Anti-extradition Bill Movement in Hong Kong published by Centre for Communication and Public Opinion Survey, The Chinese University of Hong Kong, March 2020

[3] Ibid.

[4] The Washington Post (2019-09-30). The Hong Kong protests have been going on for months. What explains this sustained action? Retrieved from https://www.washingtonpost.com/politics/2019/09/30/hong-kong-protests-have-been-going-months-what-explains-this-sustained-action/

[5] SCMP (2019-09-28). From Occupy 2014 to protests 2019. Retrieved from https://multimedia.scmp.com/infographics/news/hong-kong/article/3030696/from-occupy-to-hong-kong-protests/index.html

[6] LIHKG. LIHKG 常見問題. Retrieved from https://lihkg.com/thread/1660096/page/1

[7] Telegram. FAQ. Retrieved from https://telegram.org/faq#q-what-39s-the-difference-between-groups-and-channels

[8] BBC (2019-12-12). The powerful images of Hong Kong's protests. Retrieved from http://www.bbc.com/culture/story/20191211-the-powerful-images-of-hong-kongs-protests

violence and smear the Police.[9] This part of the chapter would examine how the POEs continues and evolves with the use of the internet.

A. <u>Appealing and mobilising people to take part in protests and use violence in the protests</u>

Unifying Protesters

3. The POEs have been described as leaderless or "no central stage". Yet, the internet, as an efficient and effect platform for mass communication of information or exchange of ideas, serves to unify the protesters.

4. The demands of the protests have been stated in the beginning, and changed over time at different stages. The "Five Demands" first emerged in written form at the conclusion of the protest on 16 June 2019. The demand for "setting up an independent commission of inquiry" for police probe was first raised in June 2019 and has become increasingly prominent and persistent since July 2019. Thereafter, the slogan "Five Demands, Not One Less" has been used in subsequent public meetings or processions. The "Five Demands" have then evolved as :

(a) Full withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill
(b) A commission of inquiry into alleged police brutality
(c) Retracting the classification of protesters as "rioters"
(d) Amnesty for arrested protesters
(e) Dual universal suffrage

5. Since mid-July 2019, the slogan "Liberate Hong Kong, Revolution of Our Times" has again been popularised in the protests and has been chanted and sprayed as graffiti by protesters.

---

[9] Takungpao (2019-08-24). 止暴制亂\亂港文宣機器網上狂煽暴. Retrieved from http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0824/340225.html



Image 1: Poster containing the slogan title 'Liberate Hong Kong, Revolution of Our Times' with timing of 31 August 2019 at Chater Garden

(Image source: LIHKG)

6. Since August 2019, "disband the Police Force" has emerged as a new demand. The demands has been circulating on the internet to connect protesters.



Image 2: Poster stating 'Six Demands Not One Less', the additional demand on top of the 'Five Demands' is 'Disband the Police Force'

(Image source: Facebook)

Appealing by Posts with Sentimental Messages

7. It is undeniable that many people would, at different extents, moved or motivated by sentimental news, messages or pictures. The most iconic image of the “Yellow Raincoat” at the early stage of the protests originated from the incident that a male fell from height on 15 June 2019. Protesters were motivated by his death to take part in the procession on 16 June 2019, which turned out to be the largest protest in HK history. The deceased’s yellow raincoat had since became an icon.



Image 3: Protest art from HK streets illustrate how people feel about fugitive bill
(Image Source: LIHKG)

8. Being saddened by the incident, some netizens asked people to come out on 16 June 2019 to show support in denouncing the Government who should be responsible and “repay by blood”:



Image 4: A post on 15 June 2019 asking Hong Kong people to come out on 16 June to show support in denouncing the Government for being responsible and must ‘repay by blood’

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 5: Some netizens stated that s/he ‘decided to join the protest on 16 June 2019 on behalf of the male’

(Image source: LIHKG)

9. Two suicide cases happened at the end of June touched the hearts of many people. A young girl aged 21 committed suicide on 29 Jun 2019. Before she jumped down from height, she wrote her last words on the wall in red and posted onto her Instagram urging others to persevere the fight. It has been widely circulated on the internet.

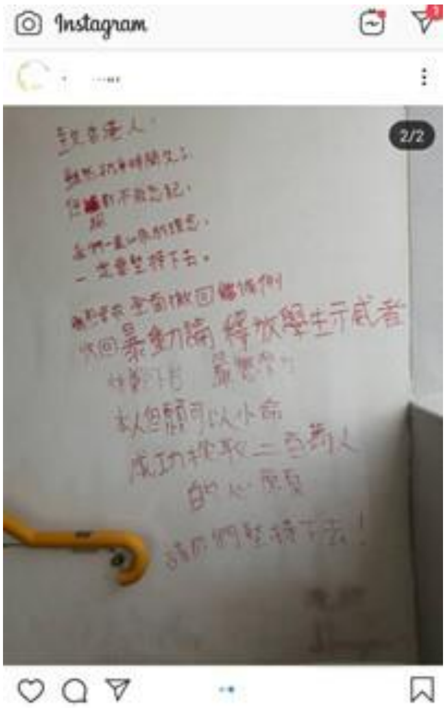


Image 6: The 'Suicide Note' asking all Hong Kong people not to forget and to persevere in the 'Five Demands'

(Image source: Instagram)

10. News articles filled the internet stating the brief personal background of the deceased and the content of the 'Suicide Note'. She stated that "I wish to spend my life for the wish of 2 million people. Please persist to fight!"

11. Within 24 hours, another lady aged 29 jumped off from IFC on 30 June 2019. She stated on her Facebook that "Hong Kong persevere, I wish to see you succeed. I cannot go on 1 July… Thanks for everyone's love, grateful for each encounter".[10] The next day, 1 July 2019 protesters stormed the LegCo Complex.

---

[10] Apple Daily (2019-06-30). 【引渡惡法】29 歲女子中環 ifc 墮樓亡 fb 留遺言：七一我去不了. Retrieved from https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190630/59773700



Image 7: News article stating the death of the “29 year old female” and the content of her post on Facebook
(Image source: Facebook)

Motivating People’s Participation of Events

12. Since June 2019, various publicity materials are circulated on the internet to solicit supports and enlist participants for various activities or protests. Starting from July 2019, netizens had been familiar with this kind of “Events Calendar” calling for support of the activities.



Image 8: These are examples of event calendars that called for support of the activities.

(Image source: NearSnake)

13. The promotional materials are effective as they are able to present numerous elements or multi information by a single visual aid. Sometimes, by using a punch line slogan or art work, the author could catch people's attention to the core details of an activity.



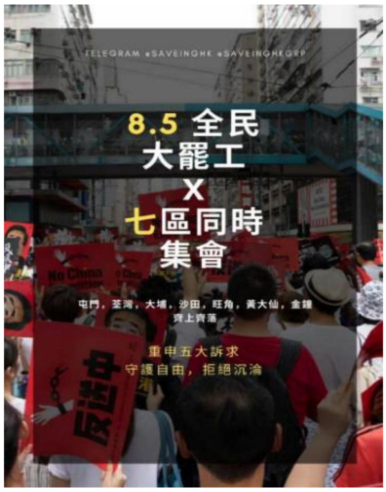




Image 9: Posters calling for all citizens to go on labour strike on 5 August 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

14. For instance, there are many posts on the internet appealing for protests on 1 October 2019 in six districts (Tuen Mun, Hong Kong Island, Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Sham Shui Po, Shatin) on the National Day.

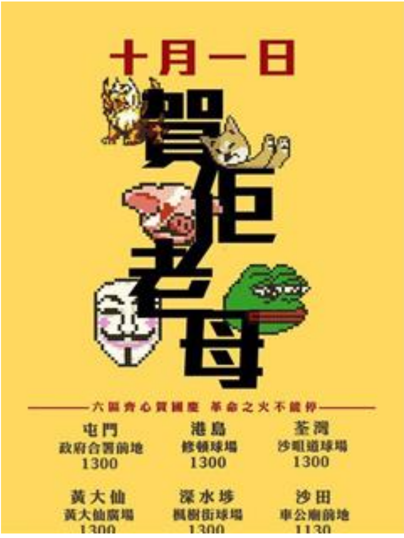


Image 10: Poster with profanity as title with appeal for '1 October 2019 – Six Districts (Tuen Mun, Hong Kong Island, Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Sham Shui Po, Shatin) celebrate National Day with the Fire of Revolution that cannot be stopped'

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 11: 1 October 2019 – 'No National Celebration, Only National Tragedy'

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 12: Online appeals mobilised people to attend protests in six districts (六區開花) on the "Day of National Mourning (國殤日)"

(Image source: LIHKG)

15. Visuals with pop art designs could much engage young generations. The following are some examples of online appeals mobilising people to attend protests in five districts (Admiralty, Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Shatin, Tuen Mun) and join the strike. The strike on 11 November 2019 was one of the major events widely covered by the media.



Image 13: "Blossom in five districts, Take Your Position"
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 14: Calls for General Strike
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 15: Poster calling for General Strike on 11 November 2019, with gathering in 18 Districts
(Image Source: LIHKG)



Image 16: Appealing for General Strike on 13 November 2019
(Image Source: LIHKG)

"Blossom Everywhere"

16. One of the characteristics of the POEs originating from the Fugitive Offenders Bill is that the protest activities have not been only centralised in traditional busy, commercial or central business districts like Admiralty, Central or Tsim Sha Tsui. Assemblies and processions have been held in different districts among the territories in residential areas like Tseung Kwan O, Yau Tong, Sha Tin and Wong Tai Sin, and even remote New Territories areas like Tin Shui Wai, Tuen Mun and Yuen Long.



Image 17: Poster to advertise public procession at Shatin on 14 July 2019 – stand up for your family
(Image source: LIHKG)

17. Some people who might not be so involved with objection to the Fugitive Offenders Bill but have been long unsatisfied with some district matters are engaged in these district activities. People's grievance on matters concerning their livelihood like the problems of parallel trading activities in Sheung Shui and the nuisance caused by those singing "Big Aunties" in Tuen Mun became subjects of the district processions.



Image 18: Two posters titled: 'Liberate Sheung Shui' to advertise a gathering on 13 July 2019 at the Sheung Shui Garden No. 1

(Image source: HK01)



Image 19: Two posters titled: 'Liberate Tuen Mun Park' to advertise a gathering on 6 July 2019 at San Wo Lane Playground

(Image source: LIHKG)

18. These district events did absorb and further unify a large portion of participants as they share common interest in the same neighbourhood on top of the demands raised in the POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill. In fact, by these events, some giant chat groups of the neighbourhood were formed like 'Shatin Group'[11] and 'Tseung Kwan O Group'[12] which did unify protesters in those districts and boost not only their participation but also their sense of belonging in the POEs they participated. The formation of these chat groups helped to fuel their grudges or dissatisfaction on district matters onto the POEs.

---

[11] Facebook Group "Shatin". Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/groups/751264848301326/photos/

[12] Facebook Group "Tseung Kwan O". Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/groups/1063204770469453/



Image 20: Poster advertising processions on 11 August 2019
at Sham Shui Po and Hong Kong Island East
(Image source: LIHKG)

B. <u>Sharing information on how to act in concert to assist the violent protesters in the clashes with the Police</u>

19. Though the protest has been described as leaderless and 'no central stage', discussions and dissemination of information on the internet is an organic process that, through the interaction of the netizens, some sophisticated or practical opinions would stand out and become noticeable, and adopted by the protesters. The following post is a typical example showing that, though the author of the post did not hold out to be an expert, his advices was 'liked' by at least 1 572 netizens.



Image 21: Instructions on how to participate in the protests on 2 November 2019 in terms of what to wear, bring and act

(Image Source: LIHKG)

20. Social media provides an easy and convenient forum for protesters to discuss and exchange ideas in tactics of combatting Police actions. For instance, after 21 July incident (For details please refer to Chapter 10), there were discussion on the internet on how to act in response to the attack in Yuen Long.



「長期置頂」727元朗反鄉黑遊行終極攻略

2192 15

再從長計議。

1. 直接衝殺入村是否理智？

我絕對明白好多手足既憤怒，作為一個係元朗長大既人我更加體諒到你地既心情，更唔好話當日係西鐵站裏面既受害者。但係你地覺得由星期一凌晨開始講起既光復元朗班圍村佬會唔知道？會唔準備？坦白講如果我地貿貿然衝入村基本上同警犬當日衝入沙田新城市廣場一樣，你唔知人地裏面有無咩埋伏，人地係屋裏面由上而下飛把刀落黎你點擋？黑社會就爛命一條，兄弟損失一個都嫌多。

2. 分化會唔會比一棍打沉一船人好？

以牙還牙既道理大家都明，但係唔係狗咬你一啖你就要咬返佢轉頭。雖然大家呢幾日都牛屎佬圍村狗咁樣叫佢地，但大家都唔好忽略其實有好多圍村巴絲係企我地呢邊。如果你燒村或者拆祠堂基本上就係得罪曬所有圍村既人，同埋更加坐實暴徒之名。

小總結：

我地非常不贊同直接衝入村裏面開拖，最重要既原因係巴絲們既安危，大家可能唔知其實祠堂係係村裏面最入既地方，而祠堂後面就係山，基本上無地方可以走。第二就係講白少少呢場抗鄉黑運動其實就係抗白色恐怖，要俾個Signal政府話俾佢地聽我地唔驚白色恐怖。我地建議可以圍住南邊圍既門口，姐係佢正門牌匾位置，同時亦係佢地鄉公所既正門。我地認為應該做返我地最熟悉既野，當佢警總咁樣圍。塗鴉、dum雞蛋之類既野乜都可以做（大家發揮創意）。如果佢地忍住唔出黎既，我覺得俾到個信號話俾大家知我地係唔驚白色恐怖既就已經叫成功。如果佢地出黎既，唔好猶疑，打到佢老母個墳都唔認得。重點係，去得南邊圍既就一定要齊裝！

逃生路線：

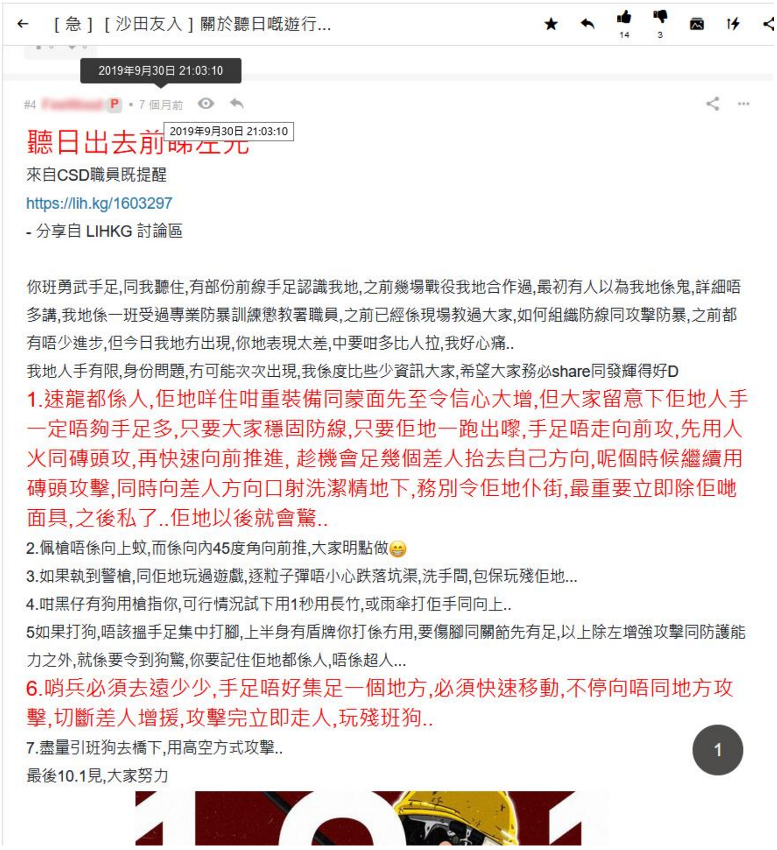
1

非常非常重要！一定要！一群人一齊離開唔可以落單！

最理想既情況係，無論發生咩事都好入夜後一兩個鐘就點都向元朗西鐵站方向走。今次唔同對付黑警，黑

Image 22: Tactical discussion on the 27 July 2019 procession to counter the Yuen Long villager triads on 28 July 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)



[急] [沙田友人] 關於聽日嘅遊行...

14 3

2019年9月30日 21:03:10

#4 P • 7 個月前

2019年9月30日 21:03:10

聽日出去前

來自CSD職員既提醒

https://lih.kg/1603297

- 分享自 LIHKG 討論區

你班勇武手足,同我聽住,有部份前線手足認識我地,之前幾場戰役我地合作過,最初有人以為我地係鬼,詳細唔多講,我地係一班受過專業防暴訓練懲教署職員,之前已經係現場教過大家,如何組織防線同攻擊防暴,之前都有唔少進步,但今日我地冇出現,你地表現太差,中要咁多比人拉,我好心痛..

我地人手有限,身份問題,冇可能次次出現,我係度比些少資訊大家,希望大家務必share同發輝得好D

1.速龍都係人,佢地咩住咁重裝備同蒙面先至令信心大增,但大家留意下佢地人手一定唔夠手足多,只要大家穩固防線,只要佢地一跑出嚟,手足唔走向前攻,先用人火同磚頭攻,再快速向前推進, 趁機會足幾個差人抬去自己方向,呢個時候繼續用磚頭攻擊,同時向差人方向口射洗潔精地下,務別令佢地仆街,最重要立即除佢哋面具,之後私了..佢地以後就會驚..

2.佩槍唔係向上蚊,而係向內45度角向前推,大家明點做😁

3.如果執到警槍,同佢地玩過遊戲,逐粒子彈唔小心跌落坑渠,洗手間,包保玩殘佢地...

4.咁黑仔有狗用槍指你,可行情況試下用1秒用長竹,或雨傘打佢手同向上..

5如果打狗,唔該搵手足集中打腳,上半身有盾牌你打係冇用,要傷腳同關節先有足,以上除左增強攻擊同防護能力之外,就係要令到狗驚,你要記住佢地都係人,唔係超人...

6.哨兵必須去遠少少,手足唔好集足一個地方,必須快速移動,不停向唔同地方攻擊,切斷差人增援,攻擊完立即走人,玩殘班狗..

7.盡量引班狗去橋下,用高空方式攻擊..

最後10.1見,大家努力

Image 23: Seven points of tactical advice on how to combat the police allegedly offered by someone purported to be a member of the Correctional Services Department Anti-riot Unit

(Image source: LIHKG)

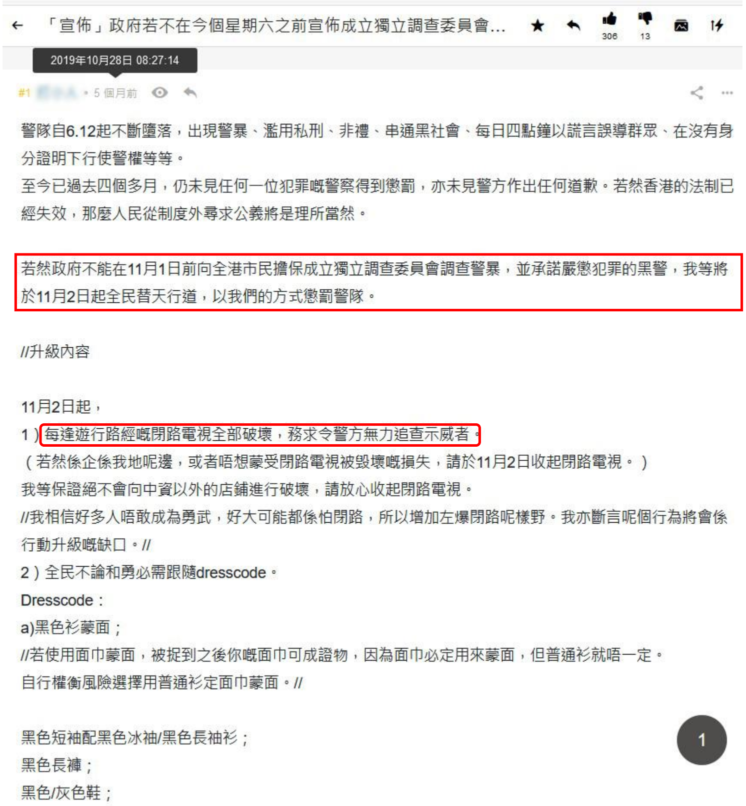


Image 24: Calls for "Punishing the Police by our means" starting from 2 November 2019. A netizen advised protesters damage all the CCTV cameras installed along the procession route so that Police could not trace the protesters.

(Image source: LIHKG)

C. <u>Teaching people how to make weapons, such as petrol bombs</u>

21. Netizens share the knowhow of making weapons on the internet. The following post appeared as early as June 2019 on the internet.



Image 25: A post instructing how to make petrol bombs

(Image source: LIHKG)

22. Below is an online post appeals protesters to bring weapons, e.g. rods and metal bars, and stay together in facing police officers on 1 October 2019.

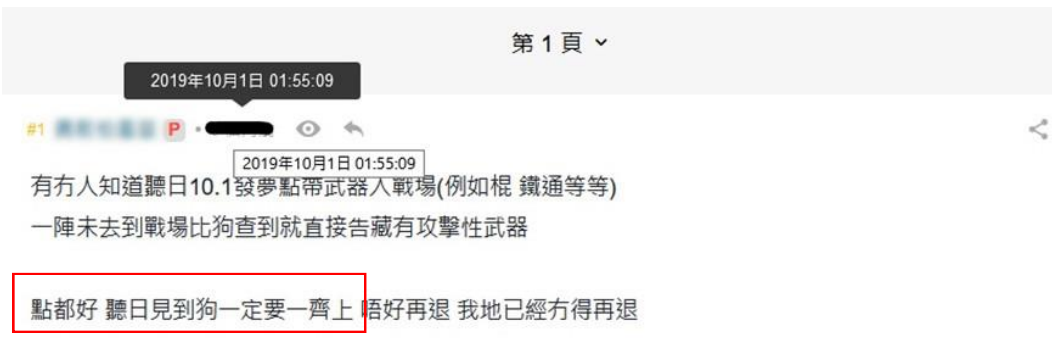


Image 26: A post on 1 October 2019 appealing for protesters to bring weapons

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 27: A post instructing how to install iron rods on roads

(Image source: LIHKG)

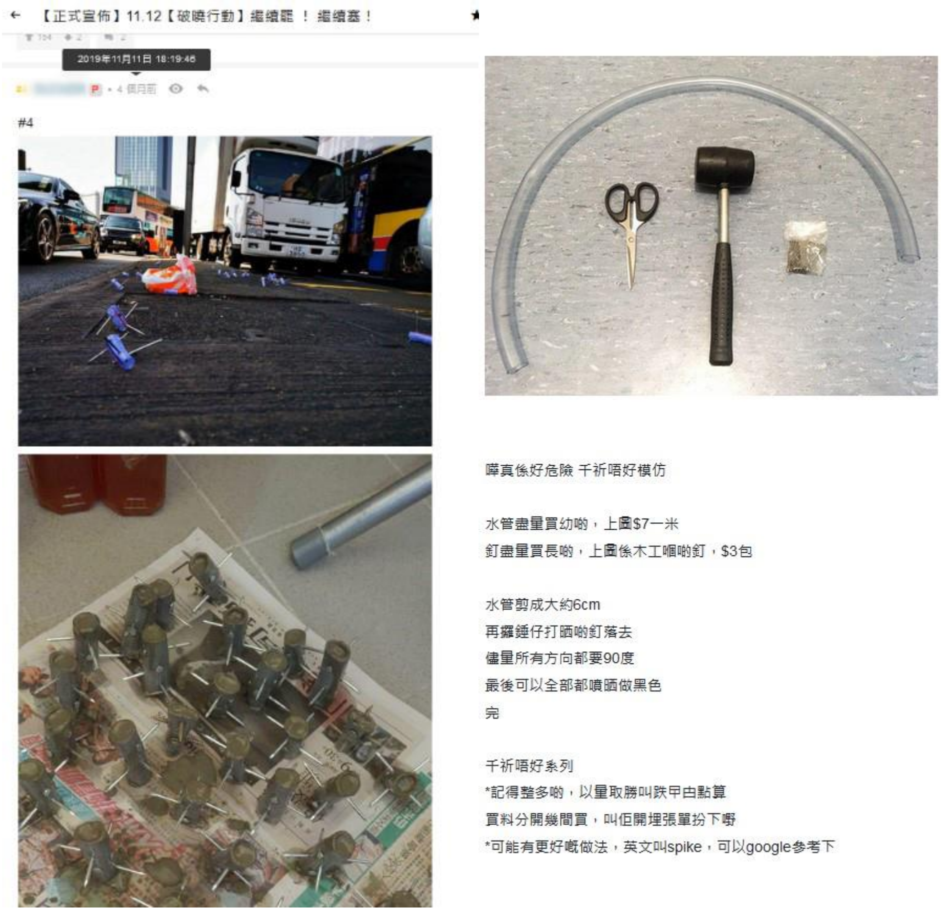


Image 28: A post instructing how to make iron nails
(Image source: LIHKG)

D. <u>Disseminating fake news or unverified information</u>

23. The most powerful character of the internet is the mass volume of information flow in a split of second. However, information are usually transmitted in the internet without any verification. It is understandable that if a person has already been implanted and occupied by an idea, it would be difficult to change his perception on the matter. The POEs are also characterised by the massive information flow. Different camps spread images and videos to sway public opinion.[13] Information spreads quickly online, sometimes without verification, let alone the origin or the source of most information are unidentifiable. It is therefore increasingly difficult for the public to decide what to believe or to differentiate fact from fiction or what is fake. One example of fake news is an online video showing petrol bombs being

13 SCMP (2019-10-14). Hong Kong protests and 'fake news': in the psychological war for hearts and minds, disinformation becomes a weapon used by both sides. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3032734/fake-news-and-hong-kong-protests-psychological-war-hearts

thrown from police cordon line on 25 August 2019.[14] The video was later revealed to be fabricated. Instead of the Police, it was the protesters who threw the petrol bombs on that particular occasion. An international media mistakenly referred to the fabricated video in the headline in an article. That media later corrected the headline and apologised to the HKPF for the mistake.

24. In response to rumours and false accusations against the Police, a Fact Check Team comprising of a group of inspectorate officers of the Police Public Relations Branch has been formed to find out the truth.[15] The Police have also adopted various channels, e.g. press conference, stand-up briefing, press release and social media platforms, for instance Hong Kong Police Mobile App, YouTube, Facebook, Instagram, Weibo and Twitter to provide clarifications to debunk speculations.[16] The Police once on Facebook rebutted some online comments stating that male officers searching a female in Tung Chung.[17] The Police clarified that the concerning officer was a female with short hair.

25. There have been many articles circulating on the internet regarding the 31 August Price Edward Station Incident accusing police brutality causing deaths in the MTR Station (Source: LIHKG). Since the incident, people gather at the Station to commemorate on every the 31st day of each month.

---

14 News.gov.hk (2019-08-29). Petrol bomb video is fake: Police. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/eng/2019/08/20190828/20190828_174312_813.html

15 Information provided by the Police.

16 Ibid.

For example, rumour clarifications on Facebook by the Police on the number of death in relation to protests (https://www.facebook.com/960526577368640/posts/2425119690909314) on 13 June 2019 and on dispersal operation near PolyU (https://www.facebook.com/960526577368640/posts/2763973200357293) on 18 November 2019.

17 Hong Kong Police Facebook (2019-09-09). Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/photos/a.965784490176182/2601183943302887/?type=3&theater and https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/photos/a.965784490176182/2601183999969548/?type=3&theater



Image 29: Post that listed 14 points to support the rumour that people had been beaten to death by police on 31 August 2019 at the Prince Edward Station, with petition for a gathering on 6 September 2019 at the MTR station to present flowers

(Image source: LIHKG)

26. The death of the HKUST student in Tseung Kwan O arose accusations against the Police regarding the cause of it. There are photos on internet allegedly showing an ambulance blocked by the Police.

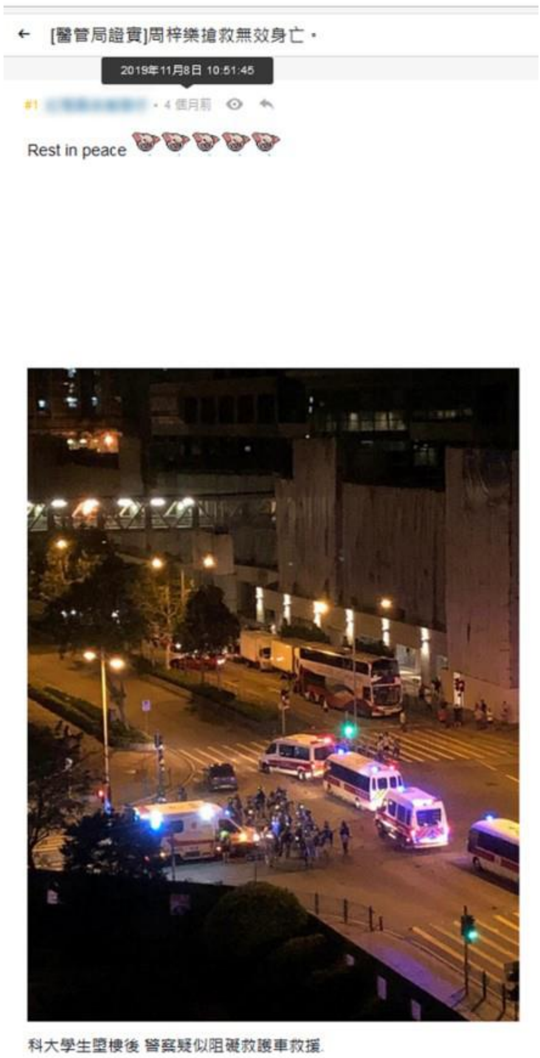


Image 30: Photograph showing an ambulance that was allegedly blocked by the Police *(Image source: LIHKG)*



Image 31: Netizens therefore opined that the Police had delayed medical assistance for the student *(Image source: LIHKG)*

27. The above mentioned incidents remain unresolved in some people's mind and its effect is still lasting. It leads to some people's distrust or even hatred against Police.

28. As at 26 January 2020, a total of 66 press conferences were held and 66 letters or responses in other forms were sent to the media.[18] When collaboration across different departments/bureaus is involved, multi-departmental press conference would be conducted, for instance, press conference was held jointly with FSD, HA and MTRC on 10 September 2019 to clarify rumours in relation to death in the incident on 31 August 2019.[19]

---

18 Information provided by HKPF.

19 SCMP (2019-09-10). Hong Kong rail operator MTR Corp finally releases images of station clashes in yet

E. <u>Tracking of duty police officers' movement</u>

29. In August 2019, a real time crowdsourced map – HKMap.live, was developed to show the locations of the Police. Apple Inc removed the app from its App Store in October 2019 saying that the app was used to target and ambush the Police, victimise residents and threaten public safety. The developer of the app disagreed that the app was illegal and explained that the app had received no legal complaints. Despite the removal from App Store, the app can still be accessed through the web version and be downloaded it on Google Play.

30. A post[20] on the internet introduced the map and encouraged the protesters to "be water". HKmap.live also gathers reports on police patrols and tear gas deployment via Telegram.

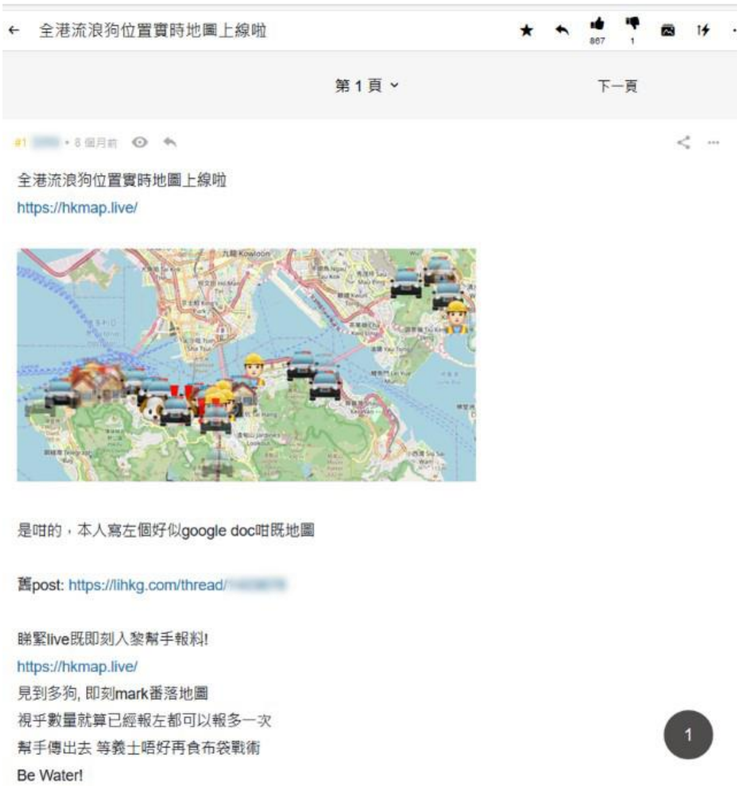


Image 32: A post on LIHKG introducing mobile app – hkmap.live on 4 August 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

another bid to end rumours that 3 protesters died in tussle with police. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/transport/article/3026510/hong-kong-rail-operator-mtr-corp-releases-images-station

20 LIHKG. (2019-08-04) 全港流浪狗位置實時地圖上線啦. Retrieved from https://lihkg.com/thread/1406448/page/1



Image 33: A post on LIHKG of a real time map showing the whereabouts of police officers near the scenes of attack on 10 August 2019.
(Image source: LIHKG)[21]

31. Police's actions and deployment plans in attempt to combat the protesters are defeated by these real time maps. Protesters' urban guerrilla tactics make them "be water" and could always disperse before police's arrivals. These real time maps could also facilitate them to instantaneously work out an escape route free from police's road blocks.

F. <u>Doxxing police officers and their family members</u>

32. Doxxing involves posting online the private data of a person or his/ her families. An unprecedented scale of doxxing occurred since the protests arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill began. According to the Privacy Commissioner for Personal Data ("PCPD"), 4 359 cases of doxxing and cyberbullying were received or proactively found during the period from 14 June to 20 December 2019. It involved 16 online social platforms and discussion forums such as LIHKG and Telegram, and 2 916 web links. The victims of doxxing are from different backgrounds and of various views, among which 36% involved police officers and their family members. On the other hand, some citizens were doxxed after making online comments against the Government or the Police, accounting for about 10% of the total cases.

33. According to the information provided by the Police, up to 11 November 2019, 1 988 police officers had been doxxed. On 22 July 2019, right after the incident on 21 July, the number of officers doxxed surged by 643 in a single day.

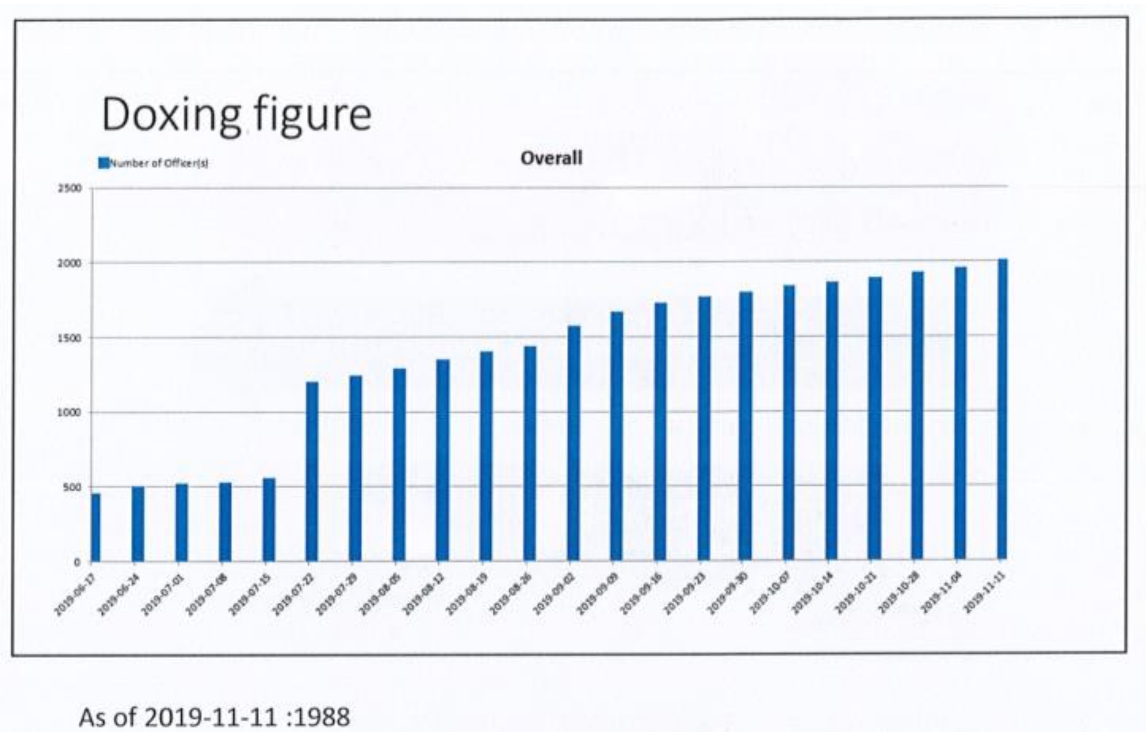




Image 34: Poster with title: 'After school opens in September, boycott the police next generation' – calling for students, teachers and parents to boycott the children of police officers

(Image source: LIHKG)

34. The High Court has granted an injunction order[22] on 8 November 2019 to restrain persons from unlawfully and wilfully disclosing personal data of police officers and/ or their family members, intended or likely to intimidate or harass them. When explaining the extended effects of doxxing, Mr Justice Coleman referred to a Court of Appeal judgement[23],

> *"The damage of widespread doxxing goes well beyond the victims. It seriously endangers our society as a whole. For it will instill chilling effect on our society when many individuals or targeted groups or sectors of the public are intimidated into silence or suppressed to express their opinion openly and honestly or conduct their affairs or pursue their life in the way they wanted for fear of being victimised by doxxing. If doxxing practices are not curtailed, the fire of distrust, fear and hatred ignited by them will soon consume the public confidence in the law and order of the community, leading to disintegration of our society."*[24]

35. Another interim injunction order[25] also restrains persons from wilfully disseminating any material or information on any internet-based platform or medium for the purpose of promoting, encouraging or inciting the use or threat of violence, intended or likely to cause bodily injury to any person or damage to any property unlawfully within Hong Kong.

36. Personal information of not only officers, but their families, including young children,

---

[22] HCA 1957/2019

[23] Paragraph 29 of HCA 1957/2019

[24] Junior Police Officers' Association of the Hong Kong Police Force v Electoral Affairs Commission [2019] HKCA 1197 at paragraph 19

[25] HCA 2007/2019

were put online. In one case, an officer received up to 300 phone calls per hour from people looking to harass him.[26] In another case, the schools of an officer's children were disclosed. People then threatened to kidnap the children and hurt anyone who go in their way.[27] A social media channel used by protesters to share personal details of police officers and their families was suspended in early November 2019 after the court injunction deterring doxxing, a similar channel opened for the same purpose within the same month.[28] The negative media coverage, social cleavage, doxxing and safety of family under threat are some of the stressors of the Police.[29]

G. <u>Inciting hatred against the Police</u>

37. The hostility of the protesters against police officers increased as the protests continue, with hate messages for beating police officers and their families. While the protesters dubbed the police officers "dog", "Black Cop(黑警)" and "Yijin guys", supporters of the Police increasingly responded to such insults by calling the protesters "cockroach" or "rubbish". The term "黑警" was first used since the Occupy Movement in 2014, after a social worker was assaulted by seven police officers on 15 October 2014. Since then, people used "黑警" to describe officers who allegedly abuse their force or power, or act like triad.[30] The term was found again on news articles, YouTube and Facebook since 9 Jun 2019, and widely used after the death of the male who wore a yellow raincoat on 15 June 2019.[31] The negative feelings of the protesters sprouted and grows as time goes. As protesters have more frequent encounters with the police, the relationship become tenser. The encounters became more violent, people's hatred against Police grows like a downward spiral. When the protesters act violently, the Police exercise a greater level of force in attempt to control the situation. (Detailed discussion in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing) More protesters might then join the combat to help out with their fellows, which may eventually outnumber the officers who therefore decide to escalate the force to control the scene.

---

26 SCMP (2019-10-27). Court order on officer data targets doxxers not journalists, Hong Kong police insist. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3034734/court-order-officer-data-targets-doxxers-not

27 Ibid.

28 SCMP (2019-11-08). Telegram social media channel used by protesters for doxxing Hong Kong police suspended after leaking thousands of pictures and videos of officers and their families. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3037001/telegram-social-media-channel-used-protesters-doxxing-hong

Ming Pao (2019-11-16). 高院延長網禁令 官稱暴力示威者「罪犯」. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%e8%a6%81%e8%81%9e/article/20191116/s00001/1573843801458/高院延長網禁令-官稱暴力示威者「罪犯」

29 Information provided by the Police

30 Wikipedia. 雨傘革命. Retrieved from https://zh.wikipedia.org/wiki/雨傘革命

31 Mingpao (2019-06-20). 網民自發清獻花. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190620/s00001/1560968869579/網民自發清獻花

38. Hatred always come out from anger or feeling of injustice. After the "Yellow Raincoat" suicide, a lady's eye was injured in Tsim Sha Tsui on 11 August 2019. On 12 August 2019, in response to the widespread discussion in the social media about the incident, thousands of protesters gathered at the Hong Kong International Airport in protest of "Police brutality", with signs proclaiming "Evil Police - An Eye for An Eye" alleging the female's injured eye was caused by the Police .

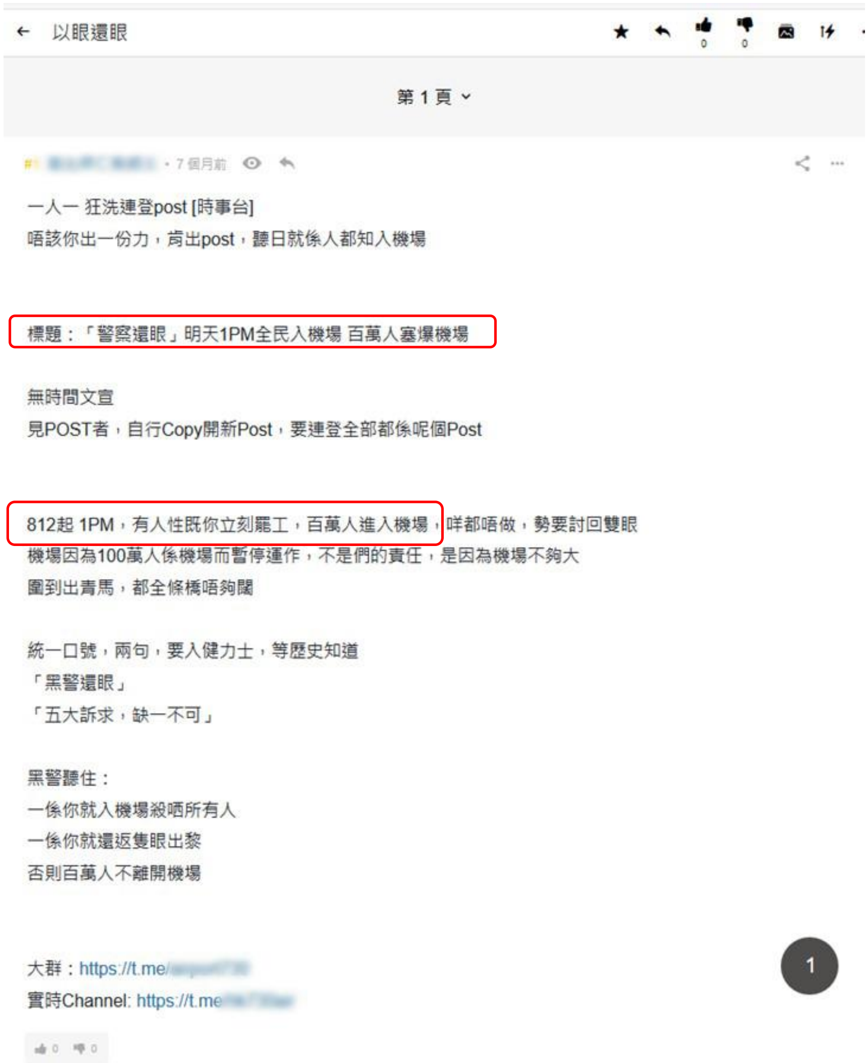


Image 35: 'Police Repay Eye'.

Appealing netizens to overfill the airport and go on strike

(Image source: LIHKG)

39. Since then, the image of a female with an injured eye has been iconic in the POEs.



Image 36: Poster calling for people to go to the airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: Facebook)



Image 37: Posts calling for people to go to the airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: Twitter)



Image 38: Posters appealing netizens to go on strike and go to the airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: Twitter)

40. On the National Day, an 18 year-old secondary student was shot in the chest by a live round fired from close range by a police officer in Tsuen Wan. This was the first injury by a live round, which was subsequently used as a propaganda to reinforce the allegation of Police brutality and to fuel the momentum of the protests. Below is a Facebook post on 1 October 2019.[32]

[32] Facebook. DeMos 馬民 - 馬鞍山・民知民 Go. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/DeMosDerivedFromMaOnShan/photos/pcb.145559177911651/1455594997912069/?type=3&theater



Image 39 *(Image source: Facebook)*

41. Since then, many similar posts have appeared on the internet, which enhance protesters' hatred against Police.



Image 40: *"While they abused you and treated you as cockroaches, you still treat them as human beings? .....Remind you their faces."*
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 41: "Since the current regime has no bottom line in suppression of the people, then why do we have to give a bottom line to ourselves?"

(Image source: LIHKG)

42. Protests slogans has even become increasingly radical since the enactment of the "Anti-Mask law". The widely-used slogan of "香港人，加油" ("Hong Kong People, cheer up") in previous protests had evolved into "香港人，反抗" ("Hong Kong People, revolt") and later became "香港人，報仇" ("Hong Kong People, revenge"). The demand of "追究警暴" ("Investigate into Police Brutality") further turned into "解散警隊"("Disband the Police Force").



Image 42: Poster with title; 'Hong Kong People, Fight Back' - Liberate Hong Kong, Revolution of Our Time

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 43: Poster with title: 'Revenge – Hong Kong people'

(Image source: Twitter)



Image 44: "Hongkongers, revenge" slogans

(Image source: LIHKG)

43. Though the posters or visuals about police brutality seems less on the internet recently because of the outbreak of COVID-19. Protesters still gather from time to time, especially on the 21st or 31st of the months to commemorate the Yuen Long Incident and Price Edward Station Incident. Some hostile messages against the Police are still very commonly found on the internet.

H. <u>Vandalising pro-Government corporations</u>

44. At the early stage of the protests, protesters mainly boycotted pro-Government or pro-establishment corporations/ companies, they rarely vandalised shops. In a bid to cause greater economic damage to those targeted corporations and companies, violent protesters have started to burn and vandalise shops in late September 2019. Vigilantism in the community has become increasingly common since September 2019.[33] On 24 December 2019, the Mong Kok branch of HSBC was vandalised in revenge after the Police froze HK$70 million raised by Spark Alliance for Hong Kong protesters.[34] Glass walls of the branch were smashed and a fire was started at the entrance. Other branches of HSBC also suffered damage.



Image 45: Protesters set fire on ATMs
(Image source: HK01)

---

33 SCMP (2019-09-18). From vandalising MTR stations to setting off petrol bombs, now Hong Kong protesters are going for fist fights or 'si liu' to settle scores with rival groups. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3027740/vandalising-mtr-stations-setting-petrol-bombs-now-hong-kong

34 SCMP (2019-12-25). HSBC issues fresh statement to distance itself from police crackdown on protest fundraiser after demonstrators vandalise Hong Kong branch on Christmas Eve. Retrieved from https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043482/hsbc-issues-fresh-statement-distance-itself-police

45. Protesters target mainly Chinese banks / shops. The following are some of their "rules":



Image 46: Post with title: 'Proposed Conduct Guideline' against specific business entities (vandalism, no patronising)

(Image source: HK01)

46. Protesters explain their vandalising acts on social media.



Image 47: Post with title: [文宣]裝修手足麻煩完事後痴依啲文宣係鋪頭

(Translation: place these posters in the shop after vandalising them).

(Image source: LIHKG)

47. Some violent protesters reminded others to leave symbolic printings at the venues after vandalising shops or banks to explain why those places are being targeted.



Image 48: Instruction to spray paint specific meaning graffiti at the entrance of MTR Stations after vandalising
(Image source: LIHKG)

48. The protests are unprecedented and has completely overturned the mode of protest in Hong Kong. It is characterised by a decentralised mode and is heavily driven via digital media. Though there is no centralised mechanism to organise, coordinate and direct the protests, there is a clear pattern of changes of tactics, momentum and strategies in all aspects for spreading and sustaining the protests.

獨立監察警方處理投訴委員會
Independent Police Complaints Council

Rooms 1006-10, 10/F, China Resources Building,
No. 26 Harbour Road, Wan Chai, Hong Kong

Tel : 2524 3841
Fax : 2524 1801 / 2525 8042
Email : enq@ipcc.gov.hk
Website : www.ipcc.gov.hk

IPCC Website

IPCC YouTube Channel

© 2020 Independent Police Complaints Council. All Rights Reserved.